Sold by
C. J. STEWART,
11 King William St.,
W. Strand, London.

Library of the Theological Seminary.

PRINCETON, N. J.

Collection of Puritan Literature.

Division SCB

Section 10767

Number

An

ANALYTICALL EXPOSITION

Of both the Epistles of the Apostle

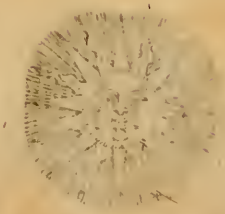
PETER,

Illustrated by Doctrines out of every Text.

And applyed by their Uses, for a further progresse in Holinesse.

By the Reverend and faithfull Minister of God, *William Ames*, D. D. and late of Christs Colledge in *Cambridge*.

LONDON,
Printed by *E. G.* for *Iohn Rothwell*, at the *Sunne* in Pauls Church-yard. 1641.



1 *Peter* 1, 2, *&c.*

Verse 1. *Peter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia;*

Verse 2. *Elect, according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace be multiplyed.*

The Analysis.

THe Scope of this Epistle is to exhort the faithfull to continue stedfast in that grace of God wherein they stood, as it is expressly set downe, chap. 5. vers. 12. But because that grace of God is considered in a two-fold respect; either as it doth put a man into the state of grace, and so it equally belongs unto all the faithfull; or as it doth direct the faithfull in the performing of their duties towards others, according to that speciall condition wherein they are placed: therefore in the first place the Apostle exhorts them to hold fast that grace, because it belongs to the state of the regenerate man: from the beginning of the Epistle to the 13 verse of the 2 chap. and then he commends and perswades them unto that speciall grace, which doth in the first place direct subjects in their obedience towards the Magistrates, to the 18

vers. Servants in obedience towards their Masters, to the end of the chapter. Wives in their subjection to their husbands, from the beginning of the third chapter to the seventh verse. Husbands in their duty towards their wives, vers. 7. Brethren in their duty towards their brethren, vers. 8. The afflicted towards their persecutors, from the 9 vers. to the beginning of the 5 chap. The Elders towards their Churches, from the beginning of the 5 chap. to the 5. vers. The younger towards their elders, at the beginning of the 5. vers. and finally, all both towards others and towards themselves, to the 10 vers. where the whole foregoing exhortation is turned into a short prayer which serves for a forcible conclusion of the whole Epistle.

To the Epistle it selfe there belong two common adjuncts. *An Inscription*, vers. 1, 2. *A Subscription*, in the three last. In the *Inscription* there is contained, according to the usuall manner of Epistles, a holy *salutation*, shewing first, by whom this Epistle was written, secondly, to whom, thirdly, with what minde or affection it was written unto them; which is set forth by that pious wish, wherein he wisheth unto them the greatest good, *Grace and Peace*. In the person writing, and the good wished there are all things the same with those that are spoken of in the second Epistle. But the description of the persons to whom it was written, is something fuller here then there; now they are described, first by their outward condition, *strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Asia, Galatia, Cappadocia*. Secondly, by their inward spirituall condition, which is set forth, 1. by the fundamentall cause of it, *Election*, to wit, of God, 2. by the finall cause, *Sanctification*. 3. by the subservient cause, *Reconciliation*, to wit, *conferred in obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ*: which three causes of our sanctification are set forth by the three persons of the Deity, to whom as to the authors thereof they are distinctly ascribed, Election to God the Father, Sanctification to the holy Spirit, Reconciliation to Jesus Christ. By the *strangers scattered*, to whom this Epistle is chiefly directed, we are to understand the Jewes, together with the other Israelites, who did imbrace the faith. For *Iames*, *John* and *Peter*, discharged their Apostleship amongst the circumcised Israelites,

lites, *Gal.*2 8,9. Therefore as *Iames* doth expressly direct his Epistle to the twelve Tribes scattered, so here also by the same reason, by the strangers scattered we are to understand the twelve Tribes scattered.

By the *foreknowledge of God*, according to which the faithfull are here said to be *elect*, we are to understand election it selfe, as it is in God, *Rom.*8.29. and by election the same act of God, as it is terminated in the faithfull, and put in execution by effectuall vocation.

By sanctification of the Spirit, we are to understand the whole spirituall change of our condition, even unto perfect holinesse and glory, because sanctification is the meanes of salvation unto which we are chosen, 2 *Thess.*2.13.

By obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Christ we are to understand the whole worke of Redemption, together with the application thereof unto justification and reconciliation with God, *Ephes.*1.6.7.

The Doctrines that we may draw from this are these.

Doct. 1. *The beginning and fountaine of all our happinesse and consolation consists in this, that we are the elect of God.*

This is gathered from hence, that the Apostle purposing in this description to make mention of those things that did most of all pertaine to the consolation of the faithfull, puts election in the first place, 1 *Thess.*1.4.

Reason 1. Because all our happinesse comes wholly from God, who is the author and fountaine of all good: now it comes from him not by the way of nature, but of counsell and free election, and so it proceeds from election it selfe.

2. Because all his speciall blessings which belong unto our salvation, depend upon election, *Ephes.*1.3.4.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort* us to use all diligence to make our election certaine and sure. 2 *Peter* 1.10.

Doct. 2. *There is no other cause or reason to be given of our election unto salvation, but only the good pleasure of God.*

This is drawne from those words: *Elect according to the foreknowledge of God*: for if there were any cause *extra Deum*, out of God, that could possibly be discerned by the eye or sense of man, it is most likely that the Apostle would have

named that, as being more knowne and discernable, and so more properly belonging to that consolation and congratulation which he proposed to himselfe.

Reason 1. Because the counsels and decrees of God do not depend upon those things that are *extra Deum*, without God, but they depend upon Gods decrees: for the decrees are first, and they last.

2. Because otherwise all the glory of our election and salvation should not wholly be ascribed unto God, and consequently all praise and thanksgiving should not be due unto him alone.

3. Because if our election did depend upon our selves, who are weake and changeable every houre, our election also it selfe would be changeable and uncertaine, and so would afford us no sound consolation.

Use 1. This may serve to *refute* those, that make Gods election to depend upon our faith and perseverance, as a cause or condition requisite.

2. *To exhort* us to acknowledge this wonderfull grace of God towards us, and to give him all the praise and glory of it, both in the inward desires of our hearts, and the joyfull profession of our tongues, and our lives answerable thereunto.

Doct. 3. *True sanctification is a certaine fruit of election.*

This is gathered from these words; *Elect to sanctification*, *Ephes.* 1.4.

Reason 1. Because sanctification is a certaine effect and signe of the singular love of Christ, *Ephes.* 5.25,26. Now this singular love, which hath respect to spirituall blessings, doth nothing differ from election, as touching the thing it selfe.

2. Because sanctification is, as it were, actuall election: for as by the election of God, the heires of salvation are distinguished from others in God himselfe, or in his intention and counsell; so also by regeneration and sanctification are they distinguished from others in themselves. For *to sanctifie*, according to the generall signification of the word, is to set apart to some use.

3. Because sanctification, although it be imperfect, yet it is that salvation and life begun unto which we are elected.

Use 1. This may serve *to refute* those men that make sanctification

fication the common possession of those that are not elect.

2. To comfort all those that are partakers of true sanctification: because thereby they may the more assured of their election.

3. To exhort us to be very carefull to encrease our sanctification.

Doct. 4. *The mediation of Christ, and reconciliation made for us in him, is the only meanes whereby the force of our election is derived unto us, and our sanctification and salvation is propagated.*

This is gathered from those words: *by obedience and sprinkling.*

Reason 1. Because God made Christ our Mediator, neither is there any other name under heaven whereby we may be saved.

2. Because God made him the Mediator of our redemption by vertue of his election: for those whom God elected, he gave unto Christ to be redeemed and saved, *Iohn* 17. 6. *John* 6. 37.

3. Because Christ is the second Adam, the Father, the head of all those that are elected and to be saved: therefore as life naturall was derived unto all men first from Adam, so also from Christ, and in him is all life spirituall communicated unto us.

Vse 1. This may serve *to refute* the Papists and others which have chosen to themselves other meanes and mediators *extra Christum*, besides Christ, and have departed from that way of salvation which the eternall election of God hath prescribed.

2. *To exhort* us to put our whole trust and confidence in Christ alone, and daily to seeke after a neerer and neerer union with him.

Doct. 5. *In that chaine of our salvation, the beginning is from God the Father, the dispensation of it is through his Sonne Iesus Christ, the application of it is through the Holy Ghost.*

This is intimated in that solemne benediction which the Church received from the Apostle.

Reason. Because this order of operation doth best agree with the order of subsisting, which the Scripture attributes to the Divine persons. *Vse* 1.

Vse 1. This may serve *to admonish us*, by no meanes to put a sunder those operations which God hath joyned together: Now this they doe, which do either divide Christ from election, or election from Christ, or the election of the Father and Christ from the sanctification of the holy Ghost, promising to themselves salvation, either by vertue of election, or of Christ, when they have not the least part of the sanctification of the holy Ghost.

2. *To comfort* all the true faithfull, which do joyne these things together: becaus they can want nothing to salvation, which is not abundantly provided for them in that cooperation of God the Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost.

Vers 3. *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us againe unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead.*

Vers 4. *To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you.*

Vers 5. *Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time.*

The Analysis.

BEcaus the Apostles scope in the generall and former part of this Epistle, was to commend unto the faithfull that true grace of God wherein they stood, therefore he doth first describe that grace, vers. 3, 4, 5.

2. By the effect of it, to wit, *joy*, and *rejoycing*, which redounds unto all the faithfull from the partaking of this grace, from the 6 vers. to the 10.

3. He doth illustrate it and confirme it by that testimony, which the Prophets gave unto this grace, vers. 10, 11, 12.

4. From thence he drawes an exhortation to holinesse answerable to this grace, from the 13 vers. to the end of the first chap. The meanes of which holinesse he shewes to be the religious receiving of the word of God, vers. 1, 2, 3. of the second chapter. The chiefe object of which word he shewes to

be

be Christ, from the 4 vers. to the 13. where is the generall end of this institution.

The description, vers. 3, 4 5. of the state of this grace is placed in regeneration or effectuall calling, in these words: *hath begotten us againe*: which regeneration is described, 1. by the principall efficient cause thereof, which is set down to be, *God the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ*. 2. By the impulsive cause thereof, the *mercy of God*, which is described by the quantity of it, *abundant*. 3. By the immediate effect thereof, *a lively hope*: the singular cause whereof is shewed to be *the resurrection of Christ from the dead*. 4. By the remote and last effect thereof, which is laid hold on also, and in some sort possessed by that hope, that is, *salvation and life everlasting*. vers. 4. Betwixt which effect and its cause he affirmes that there is a very certaine connexion, when he saith, that *that inheritance is reserved in heaven for all the regenerate*; and he gives a most certaine reason of his connexion, vers. 5. which he shewes to consists in three things. 1. In the power of God, whereby the regenerate are kept unto salvation. 2. In their faith, whereby they adhere to this power of God. 3. in the eternall degree of God, whereby he hath both provided this salvation for all the regenerate, and appointed a certaine time, wherein to bestow it upon them.

But this description of Gods grace is not simply and barely proposed by the Apostle, but after such a manner as is agreeable to the nature of the thing, that is, with thanksgiving and glorifying of the name of God, in that he hath vouchsafed to bestow so great a grace upon miserable sinners, in that first word, *Blessed be God*.

The Doctrines drawne from this.

Doct. 1. *The state of grace depends upon and flowes from effectuall calling.*

This is gathered from hence, that the Apostle speaking of the grace wherein the faithfull stood, begins with regeneration, by which is understood effectuall calling.

Reason 1. Because by our true calling we have union with Christ the fountaine of all grace.

2. Because in this regeneration there is begotten in us a principle of spirituall life, which is nothing else but the grace of

of God, or the power and gift of grace quickning our soules.

3. Because from this union which we have by being made partakers of spirituall life, there doth certainly and immediately follow a communion with the Father in all spirituall blessings, and consequently a change of our condition from that which before it was, to wit, sinne and death, to that whereunto we are called, grace and life.

Use 1. This may serve *to exhort us* to use all diligence to make our calling sure, because without it we have no entrance to the state of grace.

2. To comfort all those that endeavour to obey Gods call; for all of them have (as it were) the door of Gods grace opened unto them.

Doctr. 2. *God regenerates us, as the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.*

Reason 1. Because in Christ our Redeemer, and in our redemption performed by him, he laid the foundation of all our restoring to salvation.

2. Because he made Christ that great Shepherd, that should gather his sheepe, that is, the elect into his fold, by effectuall calling and regeneration. *Heb.* 13.20. *Iohn* 10.16.

3. Because through Christ and his name men are called and regenerated by God, 2 *Cor.* 5.18,19,20.

Use. This may serve to *informe us*, that in all those things that belong unto our salvation, we ought alwayes to looke upon God in Christ, and consequently alwayes to call upon and praise God in Christ. The solemne title, and as it were stile of God, that was used in the celebrating of his name, was not alwayes one and the same from the beginning of the world, but diverse: first, he was called by *Melchizedeck*, *the most high God, possessour of heaven and earth, Gen.* 14.19. Afterwards by reason of that singular covenant which he made with *Abraham* and his posterity, he began to be called *the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Iacob*: then againe, after that wonderfull deliverance of his people out of Egypt, for the memory of that thing there was added to his title, *The God which brought the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage*: so also in the Prophet, after his deliverance of them from the Babylonish captivity, he was called

The

The Lord which brought up his people out of the North countrey, *Ier.* 23.7,8. But now under the New Testament, and the Sunne being risen, all his other workes and benefits being obscur'd by the comming of Christ, this title is most congruous and solemne, *God the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ*, 2 *Cor.* 1.3. *Ephes.* 1.3:

Doct. 3. *A wonderfull great mercy of God appeares in our regeneration.*

Reason 1. Because he frees us from the greatest misery, and makes us partakers of the greatest good.

2. Because he doth this of his meere goodnesse, not only without our deserts, but even contrary to our deserts: when we did not so much as seek or wish for any such benefits to our selves, but were altogether aliens from God, and enemies to him.

Vse 1. This may serve to exhort us to attribute all to the mercy of God alone, and to raise up our minds to the admiration of it.

2. To be heartily affected with these mercies of God, and to be stirred up to glorifie him, *Rom.* 12.1.

Doct. 4. *Regeneration brings men a lively hope of eternall life.*

Reason 1. Because we are called and regenerated to salvation and eternall glory, 1 *Pet.* 5.10.

2 Because we have the covenant and promise of this thing confirmed to us in our very calling.

Because the Spirit wherewith we are quickned, lifts up our minds, and makes that hope to be lively.

Vse 1. This may serve to exhort us, highly to prize our calling and regeneration.

3 2. To endeavour by all meanes to cherish and increase this hope in our selves, and to take heed that it be not dead or languishing, but lively, quick, and operative.

Doct. 5. *The livelinesse of our hope depends upon the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead.*

Reason 1. Because by the resurrection of Christ, it appeares that death was subdued & overcome by him, and God was appeased in him; for otherwise, had he beene overcome by death, he would have beene perpetually kept under it.

2. Because Christ rose, as the first fruits of all the regenerate, 1 *Cor.* 15. 20. and the first borne from the dead, *Col.* 1. 8. *Apoc.* 1. 5.

Use. This may serve *to exhort us*, for the confirmation and quickning of our hope, to put before our eyes the resurrection of Christ.

Doct. 6. *That salvation which we hope for, is a celestiall and incorruptible inheritance, Vers.* 4.

Reason 1. It comes from God our Father to us his regenerate and adopted sonnes, as worldly inheritances use to come from fathers to their children.

2. Because it is not obtained by buying or any other such like meanes of our owne, but it comes by the will and testament of our heavenly Father. Now as for these reasons, it is rightly called an inheritance; so also in the nature of it it hath this excellency above all other inheritances, that it is celestiall and immortall: in which respect it doth not only excell worldly possessions, but also even that very condition of life which *Adam* had before the fall.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to suffer our hearts at any time to cleave to the things of this world, or to depend upon them, because our inheritance is not terrestriall, or of this world, but celestiall and incorruptible.

2. *To exhort us* to walke as it becommeth those that are called to so great an inheritance. For this is it which the Apostle meanes, when he usually admonisheth us to walke according to our calling, and when he prayes, that God would enlighten the eyes of our mindes, and grant us to know what is the hope of his calling, & what the riches, *Ephes.* 1. 18. as if that they that did cleerly see this and meditate upon it, could not faulter or faile in any duty.

Doct. 7. *The exceeding great power of God, his fidelity and constancie, doth make this inheritance firme and sure unto us.*

This is gathered out of the 5. verse, and you may see it prov'd, *Eph.* 1. 19.

Reason 1. Because God doth powerfully perform all things, whatsoever hee hath decreed and promised. 2. Because all the whole businesse of our salvation depends upon the omnipotency of God: for the enemies of our salvation, and the difficulties

difficulties of it are so great, that no other power is able to subdue them.

Vse 1. This may serve *to refute* those, that will have our salvation to depend upon the frailty of our will: they deny that God doth powerfully worke in us to salvation, when notwithstanding the Scripture doth expressely affirme it. *Eph.* 1. 19. & 3. 16. 20. 2. *For comfort*; for when wee have such a Keeper as is omnipotent, wee have no cause to feare that any thing present or to come should ever frustrate our hope, or deprive us of our expected salvation. 3. *To exhort us*, to depend upon that power of God by true faith, as it is in the text.

Doct. 8. *These spirituall blessings of God, should never bee mentioned or thought upon by us, without a pious desire to blesse God for them.*

This is gathered from that word *Blessed*. So *Eph.* 1. 3. 12 2 *Cor.* 1. 3.

Vse. This may serve *to reprove* that sluggishnesse and Lukewarmnesse of ours, which is oftentimes so great, that wee are no otherwise affected when we speak, heare, or thinke of these things, then when we are talking of common things: yea, we are scarce so much moved, as we use to be then, when we speak of any worldly profit, which doth delight us.

Verse 6. *Wherein ye greatly rejoyce: though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heavinesse through manifold temptations.*

7 *That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then of Gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might bee found unto praise, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Iesus Christ.*

8. *Whom having not seene, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet beleeving ye rejoyce with joy unspeakable and full of glory.*

9. *Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your Soules.*

GRace is here set forth by the effect and adjunct thereof, which he makes to consist in the greatest joy, in those words, *wherein ye rejoyce*. Now this joy is amplified by those

manifold afflictions and temptations, which usually make men sad rather then joyfull, in the other part of the 6. verse, where the amplification *per discretum axioma*, by a discret axiom, is to be conceived after this manner. Although by reason of manifold afflictions and temptations ye are exceeding heavy, yet so great is the excellency of this grace wherein yee stand, that these afflictions are no hinderance to you, because ye rejoyce in that grace with great joy.

Now that afflictions should not take away spirituall joy from the faithfull, he shewes, first, from the nature of those afflictions, wherewith the faithfull are wont to be vexed. 2. From the nature of that grace, which produceth spirituall joy. The heavinesse of afflictions is diminished. 1. By the adjunct of duration, that they are but *for a season*. 2. By the adjunct of profit, that they bring fruit & utility; and for no other cause doe they befall them, in these words: *if need be*. 3. By the singular end and use of afflictions, by which also their profit is shewed, to wit, that they serve for the triall of their faith; which triall of faith is set forth by a similie, and that of a lesser, *the triall of Gold*. 4. By the effect of it, which is *praise, honour and glory at the appearing of Iesus Christ*.

The nature of grace he shewes to be such, as that it can overcome all afflictions: the reason whereof he makes to be this, because it joynes us with Christ, without the helpe of the outward senses, and so both against and above sense, it lifts up the mind to the greatest joy verse 8. of which joy hee declareth first the adjuncts of it, *unspeakable and full of glory*, and afterwards the cause or argument that moves or stirres up such joy in the faithfull, to wit, that by their faith they are made surer of the *salvation of their Souls*; which is the end and scope of the 9 verse.

The Doctrines drawne hence.

Doct. 1. *Joy and spirituall rejoycing ariseth from the sense and participation of spirituall grace.*

This is gathered from those words: *Wherein ye rejoyce*. For *exultatio*, rejoycing is a vehement act of joy, as tis intimated in the end of the 8. verse.

Reason. 1. Because it is the nature of joy, for the mind to delight

delight it selfe with the possession of some solid good: now there is noe good that can be Compared *cum Summo bono*, with that chiefe good and eternall happines; & this we begin to have possession of in having possession of saving grace; and the compleat and full possession of it is laid hold on and made sure by faith and hope; and hence it is that spirituall joy is properly the fruit of hope. *Heb.* 3. 6. *Rom.* 5. 2. Yet notwithstanding this is so to be understood, as that wee must not exclude all those from the state of grace, which have not this joy sometimes; because this joy depends upon the sence of grace; now sometimes they have not the sence of grace, that are either hindered by ignorance, or some grievous temptation, that they cannot be sensible of that which they have.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to refute* those carnall men, who suppose the practice of religion to bee full of sadnesse and heavinesse, without any joy or delight; when indeed the joy of those men is nothing else but madnesse, *Eccles.* 2. 2. and is changed at length into the greatest sorrow: but true and solid joy is the priviledge of all the godly, because they alone have true cause of joy, and that joy shall never be taken from them.

2. *To exhort us* to raise up our mindes to the exercise of this joy, for thereunto we are called, that we should alwayes rejoyce in the Lord, *Phil.* 4. 4. An example hereof we have in the Eunuch, who went forward in his way with joy, after that by baptisme he was made sure of the grace of God, *Acts* 8. 39.

Doct. 2. *Manifold afflictions may well stand with this joy.*

Reason 1. Because although afflictions may make us somewhat heavie, yet that heavinesse is not in the highest degree, that it should wholly possesse and overwhelme our mindes, but it is mitigated and overcome by spirituall joy.

2. Because the afflictions themselves are turned into matter of joy and rejoycing, *Iames* 1. 2. *Rom.* 5. 3.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us not so much to feare the afflictions of this world, or at any time so to lye downe them, as to cast off all our joy.

Doct. 3. *Afflictions are turned into matter of rejoycing, when there is such use made of them, as that our faith and every grace is stirred up and increased by them.*

This is gathered from the seventh Verse.

Reason 1. Because we make great gaine by the triall of our faith, much more then can be gotten by the triall of gold, as it is in the Text.

2. Because faith by this triall becomes the stronger by reason of afflictions, and doth more firmely expect praise, honour and glory in Christ, as it is in the Text.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, to make it our primary and chiefest care not to faint in our faith and other graces, when we are in the midst of afflictions, as those that have but a temporary faith are wont to do, but to labour to profit by them.

Doct. 4. *This joy doth not depend upon the sight or visible presence of Christ.*

This is gathered from the eighth Verse.

Reason 1. Because faith and hope is properly of those things that are not seene, *Rom.*8.24. *Heb.*11.1. Now this joy ariseth from faith and hope, as it is in the Text.

2. Because we rejoyce either in the actuall possession, or in the certainty of the possession of the things we love. Now Christ having not yet seene we love, as it is in the Text.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, while we live here by faith, so to walke, rejoyce, and live, as if we did behold Christ with our eyes: For blessed are all they which have not seen and yet have beleeved, *Iohn* 20.29.

Doct. 5. *This joy is unspeakable and full of glory.*

Reason. Because both the thing it selfe wherein we rejoyce, and the operation of the Spirit in raising our mindes unto it, is more divine, then can possibly be conceived, much lesse expressed by us.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to admonish us* not to be too curious in the searching after and declaring of those things that are unutterable.

2. *To exhort us* to apply our soules to the sense and exercise of this grace, because they have a divine and glorious nature.

Doct. 6. *By this joy we begin to looke for the end of our faith, even the salvation of our soules.*

Reason. Because this spirituall joy is a glorious beginning

of

of our glory, and so of our salvation through Christ.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, highly to prize this spirituall joy, and by all meanes to be carefull to stirre up and cherish it in our selves.

Verse 10. *Of which salvation the Prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who propheſied of the grace that should come unto you,*

Verse 11. *Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.*

Verse 12. *Vnto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the Gospell unto you, with the Holy Ghost sent downe from Heaven, which things the Angels desire to looke into.*

TO confirme and illustrate the grace and salvation that hath hitherto beene spoken of, the Apostle in these verses brings the testimony of the Prophets; which is set forth, 1. *By* the principall object thereof, which is nothing else but this selfesame salvation and grace, wherein the faithfull Christians now stand, in these words: *of which salvation that should come unto us they propheſied.* 2. *By* the manner how they were imployed about this object; They did it with great care and diligent heed, in these words, *they enquired and searched diligently.* 3. By the singular description of that object whereabout they were imployed, vers. 11. and the manner how. The object, to wit, salvation and grace before spoken of, is described by the efficient cause thereof, namely, the mediation of Christ, consisting of two parts, his humiliation and exaltation at the end of the verse. And the manner how the Prophets are said to have been imployed about this cause of our salvation, consisted in two things: 1. That they did not only desire to know the very thing it selfe, but also the very moment of time wherein it should be reveal'd, in these words, *what, or what manner of time.* 2. That it did not depend

pend upon various and uncertaine conjectures, but they did religiously ask counsell of the Spirit of Christ, that was present with them, as of one that did foreknow and could foretell of all things that should happen, in these words, *the Spirit of Christ which was in them, that testified beforehand, did signifie.*

The testimony it selfe of the Prophets is proposed in the 12 verse, to wit, that this grace and salvation was to be revealed at that very time wherein it appeared, and no other: which testimony of the Prophets is also set forth by the like testimonies of the Apostles and Angels. The similitude that is betwixt the Apostles and the Prophets is shewed herein; that as the Prophets propheſied of these things by the Spirit of Christ, that was in them, that foretold it; so the Apostles declared the same things *by the holy Ghost sent downe from Heaven.* The similitude that is betwixt the Angels and the Prophets is shewed herein; that as the Prophets enquired and searched diligently concerning this salvation; so also the Angels did desire to look into it, all and each of which make very much for the setting forth of this grace.

The Doctrines drawne from hence are these.

Doct. 1. *The chiefe part of the propheſies of all the true Prophets that have beene from the beginning of the world, was concerning the grace and salvation that should come by Iesus Christ our Lord and Saviour.*

This is gathered from the tenth Verse. The like you may see, *Acts* 3.18,20. and 7.52.

Reason 1. Because the salvation of the Church in all ages depended upon Christ: Now it was the office of the Prophets to direct the Church in the seeking of their salvation.

2. All the Prophets were Ministers of Christ, and were led by his Spirit, Verse 11. and therefore ought to seeke his honour.

3. Because after this manner were mens mindes to be prepared by degrees for the receiving of Christ that was to come: for what is said of *Iohn* the *Baptist*, doth in some sort belong unto all the Prophets, that they did prepare the wayes of the Lord.

Use 1. This may serve for *Information*, to confirme and

establish

establish the true faith, not only against the Heathens and Jewes, but also against the Papists themselves, who say that this true doctrine of the grace revealed in Jesus Christ, is a new doctrine, and never heard of before these times; for we acknowledge no other grace, but that which those Prophets alwayes propheſied of from the beginning of the world.

2. *To exhort us*, continually to meditate upon this grace our selves, and as occasion shall serve, to shew it forth unto others, with all freenesse and readinesse of minde: for this doth become us much rather then those, that lived so long before the comming of Christ, and beheld him only afar off.

Doct. 2. *Those ancient Prophets did not only propheſie of this grace, but they did also enquire and search diligently into it.*

This is gathered from the same words.

Reason 1. Because it seem'd unto them, as indeed it is, a very great mystery of godlinesse, 1 *Tim.* 3. 16. therefore they saw that they must use the very utmost of their endeavours, to come to some measure of the knowledge of that which did lye hid therein, both for their owne comfort and the edification of the Church.

2 Because this truth was propoſed unto them in a more obscure manner under types and shadowes, so that they could not look into the thing it selfe without great care and labour.

Use 1. This may serve for *information*, hereby we may understand what manner of men the true Prophets of God were heretofore: they did not utter words without sense, or understanding, or care-taking of those things that did lye before them, as the diabolicall Prophets of the Heathens were wont to do in their fury: but they did wholly apply their minds to what they did.

2. *To exhort us* therefore to lay aside all sloth and sluggishnesse, and to use all care and diligence in the enquiring and searching after these divine things: for this industry is much more requisite for us, then it was for them, to whom the holy Ghost did immediately dictate all things.

Doct 3. *The foundation of all this grace and salvation, lies in the humiliation and exaltation of our Lord Iesus Christ.*

This is gathered from the eleventh Verse.

Reason. Because the whole mediation of Christ, whereby

our salvation is procured, is contained in those two parts.

Use 1. This may serve *to exhort us*, alwayes to joyne those two things together, in the seeking of our salvation: for they are in their owne nature so conjoyned, that if they should be separated, our faith and hope would be made altogether void. This is the rock of offence at which the Jewes did, and to this day do stumble, in that they look for outward glory and majesty in their Messias, even without any suffering or humiliation going before.

2. *To exhort* us alwayes in all things to build upon this foundation.

Doct. 4. *Not only the essence it selfe of this mystery is usually enquired after by the godly, but even all the circumstances thereof, as far forth as they may be comprehended.*

This is gathered from those words: *searching what or what manner of time.*

Reason 1. Because in this mysterie there is nothing of so small consequence, as that it may be neglected without losse to our selves.

2. Because love is careful to enquire into al things that pertaine to the thing beloved, though otherwise they may seeme to be very small.

Use. This may serve *to admonish us*, not to think it enough to have some confused knowledge of the common principles of the Gospell, but to exercise our selves to come to a more full and distinct knowledge of every grace of God.

Doct. 5. *All these things were alwayes declared only by the Spirit of Christ that was in the Prophets.*

This is gathered from the eleventh Verse.

Reason. Because as no man knowes the things of man, but the Spirit of man, so no man knowes the things of Christ, but the Spirit of Christ, 1 *Cor* 2.11.

Use 1. This may serve for *information*, hereby we may confirme our selves in the truth of Christs divine nature, because the Spirit of God which spake in the Prophets from the beginning, is here expressly called the Spirit of Christ.

2. *To exhort us*, to depend upon Christ, and from his Spirit to seek for all light in searching the Scriptures, and inquiring after divine things.

Doct.

Doct. 6. *Although saving grace was the same, that was in the Church from the beginning of the world, yet notwithstanding great is our prerogative in this grace above the Prophets, and those to whom they propheſied before the comming of Christ.*

This is gathered from the twelfth Verse, *Not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister.*

Reason 1. It is by reason of that clearer light which accompanied the comming of the Sunne, and continues from that time.

2. By reason of the greater efficacy of the holy Ghost, as it is in the text.

3. By reason of the larger communication of this grace, which is now extended unto all Nations.

Use 1. This may serve for to comfort us, because we dos abound in this grace, our hearts ought to be strengthened against all terrours.

2. *To exhort us*, that as this grace doth abound, so should our thankfulnesse also abound in all practise of piety; for he that hath received much, of him is much required.

Doct. 7. *So great is the excellency of the grace and salvation offered unto us by Christ, that even the Angels themselves desire to looke into it.*

This is gathered out of those words, *which things the Angels desire to look into.* So 1 *Tim.* 3. 16. you may see it proved.

Reason. Because there are some things in this mysterie, which the Angels themselves are yet ignorant of, *Matth.* 24. 36. into those things they desire to look, that they may know them: into other things that they do know they desire also to looke that they may delight themselves in beholding the glory of God, as it were in a glasse.

Use. This may serve *to admonish us*, never to be weary of searching into these holy mysteries, whether it be in hearing the Word of God in publick, or in reading and meditating upon it in private.

Verse 13. *Wherefore gird up the loynes of your minde, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ:*

Verse 14. *As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts in your ignorance:*

Verse 15. *But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;*

Verse 16. *Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy.*

Verse 17. *And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans worke, passe the time of your sojourning here in feare.*

Verse 18. *For as much as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vaine conversation received by tradition from your fathers.*

Verse 19. *But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish, and without spot,*

Verse 20. *Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you.*

Verse 21. *Who by him do beleeve in God that raised him up from the dead and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.*

Verse 22. *Seeing yee have purified your soules in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeined love of the brethren; see that ye love one another with a pure heart, fervently,*

Verse 23. *Being borne againe, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.*

Verse 24. *For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man as the flower of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away;*

Verse 25. *But the word of the Lord endureth for ever: and this is the word which by the Gospell is preached unto you.*

IN this part of the chapter, there is contein'd an exhortation to persist and goe forward in the grace of God; which is the Scope of the whole Epistle, as was shewed before: Now this duty is described in generall in the 13. verse, and afterwards

wards is set forth, and pressed by divers arguments in the verses following. From the description of the grace before proposed, there is as it were a conclusion drawne, which is inferred by a necessary connexion and consequence from the nature of that grace, as it was before described; which evidently appeares by the conjunction *Wherefore*; and that is the reason why in all the parts of this exhortation, as they are distinctly propounded, there is a singular respect had to some part of the description that went before, wherein the nature of that grace was explained. The duty therefore to which the Apostle doth exhort, is described. First by the cause and principall part thereof; which is *a lively hope*, of which there was mention made before in the third verse. Secondly, By the singular object of this hope, in beholding whereof it should be confirmed and strengthned; which is that grace? that is now in some measure brought unto the faithfull, but shall hereafter be communicated more fully and perfectly; in these words: *Hope for that Grace, which is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ*; which part of the description, is taken from the end of the 7. verse. 3. By the adjunct of constancy and perseverance, which is especially aim'd at in the whole Epistle, as the chiefe scope thereof; in these words: *hope to the end.* 4. There is added also the manner and meanes of performing this duty, when he tells us, that it should be done courageously and readily, with sobriety and watchfulnesse, in these words: *Gird up the loines of your mind, be sober.* This exhortation is set forth and pressed by divers arguments; the first of which is taken from *regeneration* or effectuall calling, whereby all the faithfull are made the Sonnes of God, which reason is taken from the 5. verse, where mention is made of the regeneration of the faithfull, *by the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ*: because by this regeneration or calling, the faithfull are transfered from the state of sin, into the state of grace: therefore this reason is given in both respects; both that they should renounce their former sinnes, verse 14. and that they should conforme themselves to the holinesse of that calling, wherewith they are called, verse 15. *Which* is urged and enforced by a double argument: the first is taken from

the likenesse, that ought to be betwixt the person calling and the persons called, as the *Scripture* it selfe in the old *Test.* witnesseth, verse 15. 16. The second is taken from the severity of Gods judgement, which they can by no meanes escape, that call God their Father, and yet dishonour his name, verse 17. The second argument of the exhortation, is taken from *redemption*, and the meanes and end thereof, verse 18. 19. Of which there was mention made before at the end of verse 3. and verse 11. Because the consideration of this redemption obtained by Jesus Christ, and of Christ himselfe, is very necessary and effectuall to admonish, and stir up the faithfull, to take care of their duty: therefore the Apostle stayes a while upon the description of Christ, as he was from all eternity fore-ordained to performe the office of a mediatour, at the beginning of the 20. verse, and as he was manifest in time, verse 20. 21. which is taken from verse 11. 12.

The third argument is taken from *sanctification*, as it flowes from the regeneration of the spirit, and from the word of God, which are the proper causes thereof, verse 22. 3. 4. 5. whereby the way that part of Christian duty is commended, that hath respect to the mutuall love of the faithfull amongst themselves, verse 22. because all the faithfull by regeneration, are made partakers of the same spirituall life; but yet the chiefest argument, whereby we are exhorted to constancy in that and every other grace, is taken from the incorruptible nature of the word, whereby we are regenerated, and consequently of regeneration it selfe; which is set forth by a comparison of things that are unlike it. Verse 23, 24, 25.

The DOCTRINES arising herence are these.

Doct. 1. *The Consideration of the grace of God, that is brought unto us in Christ, should stir us up to the practice of Piety.*

This is gathered from the connexion, which is intimated in that particle, *Wherefore*, verse 13.

Reas. 1. Because the end of Grace is to free us from sin, and to make us conformable to the image of God, *Luc.* 1. 74. 75. 2. Because by that meanes it is very fitting for us, to teach and further us in that practice. *Tit.* 2. 11. 12. 3. Because

cause it cannot be truly learned by us, unlesse it worke this in us, *Eph.* 4.20.1,2.3.4.

Vse 1. This may serve *to condemne* those that turne the grace of God into wantonnes *Gal.* 5.13.2. *To exhort* us to use all care to make this grace effectuall in our hearts, that it may bring forth great fruits of Piety.

Doct. 2. *The foundation of sound holinesse is firmely to hope for that grace that shall be revealed at the comming of Iesus Christ our Lord.*

This is gathered from the 13. verse. So *Phil.*3.20. *Tit.* 2.13.

Reas. 1. Because this hope is the perfection of that wherein our spirituall life doth consist. 2. Because this expectation represents the reward unto us, by contemplating, whereupon we are made unmoveable and abounding in the worke of the Lord. 1. Cor. 15. 58. Heb. 6. 11. 3. *Because* this hope begets patience, whereby with strong consolation it doth overcome all the difficulties, that are wont to befall men in the course of Godlinesse. *Heb.* 6.12.18.19.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort* us, to have a care to lay this foundation very sure in our hearts, and daily to confirme it more and more.

Doct. 3. *To keepe this hope firme and lively, we should couragiously gird upour selves that we might be prepared, and ready to performe all those things that tend thereunto.*

This is gathered from those words : *gird up the loines of your mind* ;for this is it, that is signified by the habit of a man, that hath his loines girt in Scripture, that he is prepared and ready to performe his duty. *Luc.* 12. 35.

Reas. 1. *Because* the difficulty to retaine this hope is very great, in so much, that it cannot be kept without earnest endeavour. 2. *Because* in spirituall duties our loines are too slack, that is, the sloth of sin, and infirmity hath taken hold of all our faculties. *Heb.*12. 12.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish* us, by no meanes to yeeld to the sloth and sluggishnesse of our corrupt nature, but to strive against it as much as we can, and laying aside every weight, and the sloth that doth beset us, to runne the race that is set before us, *Heb.* 12. 1.

Doct. 4. *Sobriety in the use of the things of this life, doth very*

very much conduce to the furtherance of this endeavour.

This is gathered from this word, *Be sober* and hope.

Reas. Because the love and immoderate use of the things of this world, doth so burden the soule, and glue it to the earth, that it cannot lift up it selfe to seeke after heavenly things.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, not to addict our minds to any worldly thing, but here to use this world, and not abuse it. 1 *Cor.* 7. 31.

Doct. V. *The state of adoption, whereby we are made the sonnes of God, should stir us up to the practise of holinesse.*

This is gathered from these words: *As obedient Children.*

Reas. 1. Because Children should beare the image of their Father: Now the image of God consists in holinesse and righteousnesse. 2. Because it is the duty of Children, readily and of their owne accord to apply themselves to the will of their Father. Now the will of God is our sanctification. 1 *Thes.* 4. 3. this is it that is intimated in that title, where the faithfull are called *obedient Children.*

Vse. 1. This may serve *to condemne* those, that with the wicked Jewes say, they are the Children of Abraham and of God, when notwithstanding, they doe the workes of the Devill, *Iohn* 8. 41. 2. 4. 1 *Iohn* 3. 8. 10. 2. *To exhort us*, in all things to make it appeare, that we are the true sonnes of God, by obedience unto his will, and our practise of holinesse: for unlesse we beare the chastisements of the Lord, that by them we may be made partakers of his holinesse, hereby we shew that we are bastards, and not true sonnes. *Heb.* 12. 8. 10.

Doct. 6. *This filiall obedience, and the fashioning of our selves according to the former lusts of our sins, cannot stand together.*

This is gathered from the opposition, that is made betwixt these two, verse 14. where the one being affirmed, that we are obedient Children, the other is denyed, that we should not fashion our selves according to our lusts.

Reas. 1. Because they, which by regeneration are made the Children of God, are new creatures, have a new nature and new affections, so that they have wholy renounced their former nature and affections: and for this very cause they are called in the Text, *Former lusts*, or, *which were before.*

2. Be-

2. Because the former lusts of sinne do wholly withdraw us from the will of God, which we ought to obey.

3. Because the former lusts of sinne are such, that all that are come to the knowledge of the truth, may be asham'd of them; this is intimated in the Text, where they are called *lusts which were in our ignorance:* because they cannot endure the light.

Vse 1. This may serve *to condemne* those, that professe themselves the children of God, and call upon God as their Father, & yet follow the same course of life that the children of this world do.

2. *To exhort us,* not to conforme our selves to this world, *Rom.* 12. 2. where there is a reason also given of this exhortation, in the 1 Verse, because if we do this we cannot present our selves to God as a living sacrifice, acceptable unto him. So 2 *Tim.* 2. 19.

Doct. 7. *The calling of the faithfull doth necessarily require holinesse in them.*

This is gathered from Verse 15, 16.

Reason 1. Because holinesse is one of the chiefe ends of this calling, therefore it is usually called in the Scriptures a holy calling, 2 *Tim.* 1. 9.

2. Because God which calleth us is most holy, and he cals us to have communion with him in holinesse, as it is in the Text.

3. Because the calling it selfe is in its own nature a setting of a man apart from the common and corrupt use of the world to a sacred use; and therefore it is a consecration or dedication of men unto holinesse.

Vse 1. This may serve *to rebuke and condemne those*, that seek for nothing by their Christian calling, but justification and blisse, and in the meane time altogether neglect the care to live holily.

2. *To exhort us,* in all our conversation to endeavour to be holy, as it is in the Text; *Be ye holy in all manner of conversation*; that is, so walke, as it becommeth the calling, wherewith ye are called.

Doct. 8. *The severity of Gods judgement should stirre us up to the practise of piety.*

This is gathered from Verse 17.

Reason 1. Because God in executing his judgements is no respecter of persons, as it is in the Text. Now the name and profession of the faith, is nothing else, but the person of the Christian; as circumcision and the profession of the law was the person of the Iew: Such a profession therefore without sound holinesse cannot stand before Gods Tribunall.

2. Because God doth in some sort more severely require holinesse of those that by their calling draw neere unto God, & call him Father, as it is in the Text, then he doth of others, *Levit.*10 3. *I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me.*

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us* not to cosen our selves in relying wholly upon the outward profession of faith, but to appeare before God alwayes with feare and reverence, as it is in the Text: because our God is a consuming fire, *Heb.* 12. 29.

Doct. 9. *The consideration of our redemption should be a strong argument to stir up in our hearts a desire of holinesse.*

Reason 1. Because we are redeemed from all our vaine conversation, although it be commended unto us by the use and tradition of our Fathers, Vers. 18. Therefore for a man to follow such fashions, after that he is come to the knowledge of redemption, is nothing else, but to oppose himselfe against his owne redemption, and as much as in him lies, to make it void and of none effect.

2. Because by this redemption we are bought to be the servants of God, 1 *Cor.*6.20. & 7.23. So that we ought no longer to serve sinne, nor the world, nor to live according to our owne will and pleasure, but according to the will of God and our Redeemer.

3. Because the price wherewith we are redeemed, is of so great worth, that it doth farre surpasse all the most precious things of this world: therefore there ought to be made an excellent use thereof; and yet notwithstanding only those that endeavour to be holy, make any esteeme of it, Vers. 18, 19.

Vse 1. This may serve *to condemne* those that by their life dishonour Christ, and put their Redeemer to an open shame, *Heb.*6.6. they doe as it were tread under foot his blood, that was the price of our redemption, and count it an unholy thing *Heb.*10.29.

2. *To*

2. *To exhort us*, as often as we think of our redemption, (which we ought to do very oft,) so often should we thinke that there are as it were coales of fire heaped upon our heads, wherewith we should be inflamed to this holinesse.

Doct. 10. *That we may gaine profit and benefit by the consideration of our redemption, we should diligently meditate upon Christs predestination, his incarnation, humiliation, and glorification.*

This is gathered from Verse 20, 21.

Reason 1. Because by this meanes alone is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height of Gods love in Christ made manifest, *Ephes.* 3. 18.

2. Because by this meanes alone doe we come to know, what a great worke, and of how great difficulty it was, to deliver men from their sinnes.

3. Because by this also we may easily gather, how fit and just it is, that we should live unto God and Christ in all holinesse, which is the scope of this Text.

Use. This may serve *to admonish* us not to passe over this mysterie slightly in our thoughts and meditations, but to continue in contemplation thereupon, that so we may, as it were, suck therehence the juice of true godlinesse.

Doct. 11. *The proper and immediate use of all our contemplation upon Christ, and our redemption obtained by him, is, to confirme our faith and hope in God.*

This is gathered from Verse 21, at the end.

Reason 1. Because the end of Christs mediation is, that through him we should believe in God, as it is here affirmed.

2. Because Christ left us an example of putting our faith and hope in God; for he in his way perfectly performed it, and by that meanes attained the highest glory.

3. Because for our sakes and for our good was that glory given unto Christ, which our faith and hope look and seeke after.

Use. This may serve *to exhort us*, alwayes to look unto Iesus Christ the author and finisher of our faith, *Heb.* 12. 2. and by looking unto him to quicken our faith and hope.

Doct. 12. *The calling of the faithfull hath the purification of the soule joyned with it.*

This is gathered from the beginning of the 22 Verse. So 2 *Pet.* 2. 20. Hence it is that the washing of baptisme represents that grace which is given in their calling: Now this purification and washing, which is communicated in their calling, and signified by baptisme, is not by justification only, which consists in the imputing thereof unto remission of sinnes, but also by sanctification and the reall clensing of the soule, 1 *Cor.* 6. 11. *Tit.* 3. 5. And this sanctification is chiefly referred to the soule as to its proper object.

Reason 1. Because outward purification and sanctification is nothing worth at all, if it be divided from the inward: for this was the hypocrisie of the Scribes and Pharisees, that are said to have made clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, when within they were full of extortion and excesse, *Matth.* 23. 15.

2. Because the operation of the Spirit begins at the soule, and from the soule is derived to the outward man: for as all pollution proceeds first out of the heart, *Matth.* 15. 19. so also purification.

3. Because if the soule be once purified within, outward purity will follow of its owne accord, *Matth.* 23. 26

4. Because this purity doth more properly consist in the affection & intention of the soule, then in the outward practise; for the same outward works may be done by impure men; but the faithfull differ from all impure hypocrites by their inward dispositions and affections.

5. Because the faithfull themselves are oftentimes sustained and receive comfort by the purity which they have within in their will and purpose, though they cannot produce it into act according to their desire, *Rom.* 7. 21. 25.

Use 1. This may serve to condemne those that are whited over with the name of Christians, but never look after the purity of their soules: and therefore they may be rightly called whited wals, *Acts* 23. 7. and whited Sepulchres, *Mat.* 23. 27.

2. *To exhort us* to use the utmost of our endeavours to purifie our souls, that they may be made the temples of the holy Ghost.

Doct. 13. *This purification is wrought by the hearing of the word, & the effectuall operation of the holy Ghost by the word.*

This

This is gathered from these words: *in obeying the truth through the Spirit.* Where the word of God, especially of the Gospell, is called the truth, partly for that excellency of truth that it hath above all other sayings or writings, and partly because by vertue of the truth or faithfulnesse of those promises which are contained in the word, this purification is wrought, together with all those spirituall blessings, that pertaine to the consolation and salvation of the faithfull.

Reason 1. Because the word together with the Spirit doth reveale unto us that true purity which is pleasing and acceptable to God, whereof we are ignorant.

2. Because the word together with the Spirit is the oracle or power of God unto salvation, and consequently is able to beget every grace in us.

3. Because faith purifies the hearts of the faithfull, *Acts* 15. 9 and faith comes by hearing of the word, *Rom.* 10.17.

Vse 1. This may serve *to refute* the heresies of those, which either hold that there is such power in the strength of nature, that men may sanctifie themselves at their own free will and pleasure, or, which comes all to one, maintaine that the outward preaching of the word is sufficient without the powerfull operation of the Spirit.

2. *To exhort us*, first, to hearken diligently unto the word of God; secondly, not to rest our selves satisfied in the bare letter of the word, but alwayes to crave the grace of God and the operation of his Spirit: thirdly, in the use of the word through the Spirit to seek the purification of our soules.

Doct. 14. *The effect and signe of a purified soule, is a pure, sincere, and fervent love of the faithfull, as of brethren.*

This is gathered from these words: *unto love of the brethren.*

Reason 1. Because hatred, envie, wrath, strife, enmities, and such like affections, especially, when they reflect upon the good, are some of those filthy pollutions of the flesh, from which the soule of the faithfull is purified, *Gal.* 5.19.20.

2. Because the purification of our soules makes us to love purity in others, and no man can take delight in the purity of others, unlesse he be in some measure purified himselfe.

3. Because in the mutuall love of the faithfull divers operations

rations are exercised, to the performing whereof, their soules are in a speciall manner purified and sanctified, as doing good, bearing with infirmities, edification of the Church, and glorifying the name of the Lord.

Vse 1. This may serve *to condemne* those, that shew themselves great enemies to godly men: they may rightly be called Cainites, for they have gone in the way of *Cain*, with those to whom the woe is denounced by *Iude*, Verse 12.

2. *To exhort us* by all meanes to endeavour to gaine this brotherly love of the godly: wherein there is required, First, sincerity, that it should be without hypocrisie or simulation, so that it shold not be *in words* or *in shew*, as the Apostle speaks, but *in heart*. Secondly, that it should be not only from the heart, but from a pure heart; because there is a kinde of love that is in some sort sincere, but yet it is impure, whiles that it doth either neglect the chiefest good or else useth such means to procure some good as are contrary thereunto: as if a man to deliver his brother from danger, should perswade him to deny the truth, or to dissemble. Thirdly, That it should be fervent, because the affection ought to be set in the highest degree upon those objects, where there is found to be the chiefest reason to stirre it up.

Doct. 15. *Regeneration, that is common to all the faithfull, is a strong argument to provoke them to love one another.*

This is gathered from the end of verse 22. and the beginning of the 23. where this reason is given, why they should love one another, because they are borne againe.

Reas. Because by this regeneration all the faithfull are brethren, begotten by the same Father, of the same blood, and partakers of the same spirit.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, to be mindfull all this argument, and to give it roome and power in our hearts, so that we may upon occasion say as *Abraham* did, *Gen.* 13. 8. *Let there be no strife betweene me and thee; for we are brethren:* and to admonish others also in those words of *Moses* *Act.* 7. 26. *Sirs, Ye are brethren: Why doe ye wrong one another?*

Doct. 16. *The word of God is the incorruptible seed or principle of this regeneration.*

This is gathered from the 23. verse,

Reas. 1.

Reas. 1. Because it is the word of God, (as it is in the Text;) which liveth and abideth for ever; whose nature it resembleth in this, that the operation thereof is not momentany or temporary, but it abideth for ever. 2. Because to speake properly, it is the word of eternall life, *Iohn* 6. 68. for the end and use thereof is, to bring men to eternall life. 3. Because where it is once truly received, it never faileth. *Iohn* 4. 14.

Use. 1. This may serve *to refute* the errour of those, which hold that they that are truly regenerated, usually fall away from the grace of God, and so are borne againe and againe, after they have beene regenerate: This is contrary, not only to the promise and covenant of God, that he will keepe the faithfull, that they shall not depart from him *Ier.* 32. 40. and to that comfort which Christ gives his members, that no man shall pluck them out of his hand, *Iohn* 10. 28. But also to the operation of the spirit in the hearts of the faithfull, and to the nature of the life it selfe, that is communicated unto them, which is incorruptible and eternall, as it is in the Text.

2. To *comfort us* against all those feares and terrours, that may arise from the consideration of our own infirmities; for although of our selves we are continually falling to corruption, yet there is something borne in us, if we be truly faithfull, which is incorruptible and shall abide unto eternall life.

3. To *exhort us* to carry our selves answerable in all Christian duties, that is, to be constant and incorruptible in performing them: and this is it at which the Apostle doth especially aime at in this place, when he stirres up the faithfull to a fervent and constant love one of another, by this argument, because they are borne againe by the incorruptible word.

Doct. 17. *The condition wherein the faithfull are put by this incorruptible regeneration of the word, is farre more excellent then all the glory of this world.*

This is gathered from verse 24,25. where there is a comparison made betwixt, flesh, grasse, the flower of grasse, and the glory of man, on the one side, and the word of God on the other; not as the word is considered in it selfe, but as it is received by the faithfull, and translates them into the kingdome of God.

Reason

Reason. Because as it is in the text, there is nothing in all the world but vanity, that quickly falleth away: whereas the word of God endureth for ever.

Vse 1. This may serve *to exhort us* to make more precious account of the word of God and of his kingdome, then of all the world, and that not only in respect of our selves, but of others also; as the Apostle doth in this place extoll the word of God and the condition of the regenerate above all the things of the world, that by this consideration among others he might move the faithfull to esteeme of others, that are regenerate, more highly, and to love them more fervently, then all the things of the world.

2. To comfort us, in that God of his bounty and grace hath advanced us to such a dignity.

Doct. 18. *We ought to have a singular respect unto this dignity and excellency in the word of God, as it is preached unto us by the Gospell.*

This is gathered from the 22 verse at the end.

Reason 1. Because the same word of God is preached unto us, that is so much commended by the Prophets, Apostles, and by Christ himselfe, as it is in the Text, *this is that word.*

2. Because it makes much unto our salvation, as it is preached unto us.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, not to satisfie our selves with some generall esteeme of the word, as many are wont to doe, that are weary of the word that is preached unto them, and loathing it do reject it; but religiously and reverently to receive the word that is preached unto us, as the eternall word of God.

Chapter II.

Chapter II.

Verse 1. *Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and evill speakings,*

Verse 2. *As new borne babes, desire the sincere milke of the word, that ye may grow thereby.*

Verse 3. *If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.*

Verse 4. *To whom comming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,*

Verse 5. *Ye also as lively stones are built up a spirituall house, an holy Priesthood, to offer up spirituall sacrifice, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.*

Verse 6. *Wherefore it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect, precious, and he that beleeveth on him shall not be confounded.*

Verse 7. *Vnto you therefore which believe he is precious, but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,*

Verse 8. *And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they are appointed.*

Verse 9. *But ye are a chosen generation, a royall Priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth the praises of him, who hath called you out of darknesse into his marvellous light:*

Verse 10. *Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God; which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.*

THe same exhortation that the Apostle had before proposed, he doth here againe repeat and presse, and that not simply and barely, but by that principle and meanes, whereof there may and ought to be very good use made. For by occasion of those things, which he had lately spoken of the word of God, he stirreth up all the

faithfull to the right use of this word, by whose helpe they might persist and grow in that grace, wherein they stood. The occasion and connexion of this exhortation with the words going before is intimated in that phrase or particle, *Wherefore*. The exhortation it selfe is to a desire or love of the word of God, which he had before commended, verse 2. Which exhortation he doth so lay downe, that in the first place he shewes, that the vices which are contrary to this duty, must be laid aside, and taken heed of, which are five: *malice, guile, hypocrisies, envies, evill-speakings*, verse 1. And in the second place he gives reasons agreeable thereunto, to stirre us up unto this duty, (to wit, a desire of the word.) The first reason is taken, from the use or effect of this word in respect of them, that it makes much for the edification of the faithfull: and this Use is allegorically set forth, verse 2. where the regenerate faithfull are compared to infants newly borne, and the word to sincere milke; and the edification which is made by the word, is compared to that action, which infants obtaine by the use of wholesome milke. The second reason is taken, by a continuation of the same allegory, from the object of the word, which he proposed to be tasted, and that is God himselfe and our Saviour Jesus Christ: whose perfection and fitnesse for edification is declared. Verse 3. where he is said to be *gracious*: and is confirmed also by the experience and testimony of all the faithfull, who are said to have *tasted* this graciousnesse, *ibid. if so be yee have tasted that the Lord is gracious*.

In the explication of this affection that ought to be set upon our Lord Jesus Christ, as the primary object of this word, the Apostle continues from Verse 4 to the 11. Where in the first place the affection and duty it selfe of comming unto Christ, and adhering unto him by faith, is proposed, verse 4. *To whom comming*. And then the reason of this duty is allegorically declared, to wit, that Christ is the foundation of the spirituall building that liveth for ever. *Ibid. as unto a living stone*; and the faithfull are the parts of the building, or of the spirituall house that is to be built upon this foundation, at the beginning of verse 5. And he doth further illustrate both parts of this reason. The first, concerning the foundation or

subject

subject, he doth declare by divers arguments; when he saith that it was disallowed of men, but yet chosen of God, and precious, verse 4. The second, concerning the parts of the building that are joyned to it, he doth illustrate & urge from the effects, which are allegorically also set forth, to wit, that by this comming unto Christ, as unto the foundation, the faithfull are not only made a spirituall house, as the temple wherein sacrifices acceptable to God are offered up, but they shall also be the Priests that shall offer up spirituall sacrifices, acceptable to God through Iesus Christ, verse 5. This that hath beene spoken of the saving effect of Christ, as our Saviour; which redounds unto all the faithfull, the Apostle doth confirme by the testimony of Scripture, verse 6. Which testimony he doth explaine and apply by the contrary affections and manners, how contrary sorts of men carry themselves towards Christ, that is, the believers, and the unbelievers: To the believers Christ is said to be precious, verse 7. at the beginning, because they put their whole trust and confidence in Christ, and consequently give him the honour of the true Messias and Saviour: but to the unbelievers he is a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, verse 7,8. Because being offended at his humility they do not receive him as their Saviour: whose infidelity he doth illustrate by the antecedent decree of God, whereby it was ordained, verse 8. at the end. *Whereunto also they are appointed.* As on the contrary the condition of the faithfull is illustrated. First, by the secret election of God, that was the cause thereof, verse 9. at the beginning. Secondly, by the dignity which they obtaine by faith by vertue of this election, to wit, that they are *a royall Priesthood, an holy nation, Gods peculiar people.* Thirdly, by the end and use of this dignity to which they are called, which is, to shew forth the praise of God, verse 9. at the end. Fourthly, by comparing the state that is unlike it, wherein they were before their calling, to this state of excellency and dignity whereinto they are now put by their calling unto faith in Christ, verse 10.

The Doctrines arising from hence are these.

Doct. 1. *The right use of the word of God is the proper meanes to increase grace.*

This is gathered from the connexion of this exhortation with that which went before. For when the Apostle had before exhorted to constancy in grace, and to obedience, in holinesse, and to brotherly love; by a reason also taken in the last place from the worde of God, whereby as of incorruptible seed all the faithfull are regenerated, here in the beginning of this Chapter he commends unto us the right use of that word, as the proper and only meanes to perfect all those things.

Reas. 1. *Because* the word is the instrument chosen by God and sanctified to that use. 1 *Cor.* 1.21.2. *Because* the word, especially of the Gospell, is the ministration of the Spirit, who is the authour and finisher of every grace. 2 *Cor.* 3. 6.8. 3. *Because* the word shewes us the good and perfect will of God. *Rom.* 12. 2.

4. *Because* it furnisheth a man unto every good worke. 2. *Tim.* 3. 17.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to refute* some fanatick hereticks, that neglect the word of God and looke for immediate revelations, and dreame of a greater perfection then is contained in the word.

2. *To exhort us,* to give diligent heed unto the word of God in all things, untill we come to the end of perfection in heaven. 2. *Pet.* 1. 19.

Doct. 2. *If we meane to use the word of God aright, wee must have our minds ready and willing to lay aside all those vices that are contrary to the power of the word.*

This is gathered from the 1. verse. Where five remarkeable vices are propounded, to be laid aside, denyed, and mortified, before the word can have its due effect in our hearts.

Reas. 1. Because as the matter, if it be not fitly prepared, cannot receive the forme; neither can the field, if it be not manured, cherish the seed to bring forth fruit: So neither can the heart of man, if it be not subdued by repentance, receive the word of God with profit. 2. Because such a purpose to forsake all that is contrary to the word of God, is the first beginning of that saving operation, which the word of God doth make, whersoever it begins to be received, and whereby it makes way for it selfe, to perfect all operations.

Vse. 1.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to condemne* those, that will be hearers of the word of God, but so, that they will not forsake their accustomed sinnes. 2. *To admonish us*, not to take this thought and purpose into our minds in the generall, and once only at our first conversion; but upon all occasions, seriously to renew this purpose, especially when we prepare our selves to heare the word of God.

Doct. 3. *We must lay aside these vices not in part only, but wholly.*

This is gathered from the word, *all.*

Reas. 1. Because repentance is not true and unfained, unlesse it abhor the very nature of sinne; it must with one and the same kind of hatred hate all kind of sinne. 2. Because a man may easily deceive himselfe, whiles he thinks that he hath laid aside some vice, if he doth not detest all appearance of it, what Specious shew soever it may seeme to have.

Vse. This may serve *to instruct* us, seriously to examine our hearts, least through some deceitfulnesse thereof, there should lurke some vice, whereof we thinke our selves to be free.

Doct. 4. *We should have a singular care to lay aside those vices, that are contrary to those duties, to which we are in a speciall manner called; and to that disposition, which is especially required in Christians, that they may profit by the word of God.*

This is gathered herence, that the Apostle, when in the last place, he had exhorted unto unfained love of the brethren at the 21. verse of the former Chapter, doth here marke out those vices, that are most of all contrary to this love; & when he would commend the simplicitie of infants, as a disposition requisite to receive the word of God with profit, he casts aside those vices which are directly opposed to that simplicity.

Doct. 5. *To make a good use of the word, besides the laying aside of those evill affections, that we spake of before, it is required that we should stirre up that good affection in our hearts, which is called appetite or desire.*

This is gathered from the 2. verse. Now this desire is expressed in other places of the Scripture, by a spirituall hunger and thirst. *Isai.* 55.1. *Apoc.* 21. 6. And the degree thereof is set downe, that it should be the highest. *Psal.* 119. 20. 81. 82. Which containes in it, 1. a high esteeme of Gods word. *Psal.*

119. 2. 2. An earnest endeavour, answerable thereunto, to use it and enjoy it. *John* 6. 27. 3. A delight, whereby we are well pleased in the sweetnesse thereof, *Psal.* 119. 103.

Reas. 1. Because the word is absolutely necessary for us; without it we cannot live; for it is our milk or spirituall food, as it is in the text, 2. Because we alwayes want something that may begotten: this is also signified in the text, when we are called new borne babes; whereby it is intimated that our imperfection is so great, that by reason of it, we should earnestly desire the helpe of the word. 3. Because the excellency and perfection of the word is so great, that it should of it selfe delight us, though we stood in no need of it our selves; this is also intimated in the text, when there is mention made of the sincerity of the word, and of the goodnesse of God that appeares therein.

Vse. 1. This may serve to condemne that satiety and loathing of the word, that appeares too evidently in too too many.

2. *To admonish us*, not to suffer our affections to be taken up with the things of this world, thereby to lessen that desire, which we should have to the word of God. 3. *To exhort us*, to use the utmost of our endeavours to stir up and increase these pious affections in our selves.

Doct. 6. *This affection and desire that wee ought to have to Gods word, should have respect to the sincerity thereof.*

This is gathered from that, *desire the sincere milke of the word*: that is, the nature it selfe of the word and of the things proposed therein, as they are pure, and affoord nourishment fit for our Soules.

Reas. 1. Because otherwise we doe not desire the word, as it is the word of life, or the bread of life, or the milke of life, as it is in the text, but as we doe apprehend it under some carnall shew. 2. Because this desire alone proceeds from spirituall life, which seekes after that in the word that tends unto life, which is intimated also in the text by the similitude of infants, that naturally desire their mothers milke.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to reprove those* ministers that falsifie the word of God by their owne mixtures and devices, and obtrude upon him an adulterate word, in stead of the simple and

and sincere word. 2. *To admonish* the hearers not to suffer their affections to be carried either towards the person of the speaker, or towards the manner of his speaking, much lesse towards those strange forgings which many use in their speaking, but sincerely to seeke for the sincerity of the word.

3. *To exhort us*, highly to prize this sincerity of the word, and to endeavour all that we can to preserve it as well in our selves as in the Church.

Doct. 7. *Then and not before, doe we use the sincere word of God aright, when we grow thereby.*

This is gathered from these words: *that ye may grow thereby.* This is signified in all those places of Scripture, where the end of the word is made to be the edification of the faithfull: for *to edifie* is to promote the structure of the edifice, to a greater perfection, after that the foundation is already laid. This is expressed also *Eph.* 4. 16.

Reas. 1. Because we are imperfect, like as infants that are newly borne: now we are perfected, when the word of God dwells richly in us, *Coloss.* 3. 16. 2. Because the word it selfe in its owne nature alwayes tends and leads to perfection: for it is the perfect will of God, *Rom.* 12. 2.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to reprove* those, who, when for the time they ought to be teachers, doe yet remaine unskilfull and infants, *Heb.* 5. 12. 13. 2. *To admonish us*, never so to rest satisfied with that which we have attained, as if there were nothing more to be gotten; for although we have all other things, yet it is required, that we should increase more and more in it, 1. *Thes.* 4. 1. 10. 3. *To informe us*, hereby we may understand, that the word of God is necessarily to be used, not only by the ignorant and unskilfull, but also by all those that doe yet want some thing, and doe desire to increase that which they have. 4. *To instruct us*, to examine our selves by this marke, whether we use the word of God aright or no?

Doct. 8. *In the Gospell there appeares such graciousnesse and goodnesse of God, that it stirres up all the faithfull, to an earnest desire thereof.*

This is gathered from the 3. verse, *that the Lord is gracious*: Where by *God* we are to understand Christ, as it appeares by the following words: by *graciousnesse* we are to understand that

that grace which is revealed in the Gospell, as it evidently appeares by the connexion of this verse, with that which went before. *So* Tit. 3. 4.

Reas. 1. Because this glorious grace of God, which brings salvation unto men by Christ, is the subject matter and argument of the Gospell.

2. Because God bestowes this grace upon us, being altogether unworthy of it, enemies to him, and seeking no such thing of him: for after such a manner is this grace bestowed upon us, as that from the beginning to the end, the whole businesse depends upon the meere goodnesse of God.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to informe us*, to judge of the quality and quantity of the goodnesse and graciousnesse of Christ, no other way but by the word of the Gospell; for we must not imagine, as many use to doe, that through the graciousnesse of God, it shall be well with us, though we continue in our sinnes without repentance and turning to God: no such graciousnesse is revealed in the Gospell. 2. *To instruct us*, alwayes to admire the riches and bounty of Christs grace, that is revealed in the Gospell. 3. *To* exhort us, earnestly to desire, to take delight, and to rejoyce in hearing and meditating upon Gods word. *Psal.* 27. 4. & 65. 4. & 119. 103. in this respect is the use of the word of the Gospell compared to the banquet of a King, wherein all things are full of Sweetnesse and delight. *Luke* 14. 16. 17.

Doct. 9. *This goodnesse of Christ in the Gospell is proposed to us to be tasted.*

This is gathered from these words: *If so be ye have tasted.* *So Psal.* 34. 8. *Taste and see.* That is, we should so lay hold upon it by faith, that we may have an inward sense, and experience of the vertue and power thereof.

Reas. 1. Because in the Gospell, we are called to such a neere union and communion with Christ, that he is made unto us our spirituall bread and food, so to be tasted and eaten by faith, that he turnes to our spirituall nourishment. 2. Because our comfort depends upon this, if wee perceive in our selves the favour of Christ, as it were the favour of life unto life. 2 *Cor.* 2. 15. 16. 3. *Because* the power of Christ in drawing our soules unto himselfe, for the most part consists

in

in this, that we have his goodnesse and love, to be tasted, as it were, *Gal.* 2.20. 2 *Cor.* 5.14.

Vse 1. This may serve *to reprove those*, that doe not use the word of God, as food to be tasted and eaten, but for custome and *pro forma* fashion-sake only, or at least account it a thing to be understood and disputed of only; but not to be tasted.

2. *To exhort us*, to use all care and diligence to preserve this taste of the goodnesse of Christ in the Gospell; for this is proper to the regenerate, as it appeares in the text: and consequently it is a signe of salvation. Some indeed that are not regenerate are said to taste of the heavenly gift, of the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, *Heb.* 6.4, 5. but this comes to passe, first, by some speciall operation of Gods Spirit, whereby such men are enlightned above the common sort of unregenerate men. Secondly, this is but for a little while, it is not constantly. Thirdly, in the unregenerate it is but a sudden motion of the minde, it is not a rooted affection. Fourthly, it is either of grace only to come, which is apprehended also, but by a humane and uncertaine hope; or else it is a presumption without ground: but the taste of the faithfull is of grace, not only to come, but also present, with a divine assurance wrought by the operation of the holy Ghost, and sound faith and repentance.

Doct. 10. *The regenerate in the beginning; although they be truly faithfull, yet they have but a little taste of Gods goodnesse, they do not fully comprehend it.*

This is gathered from the same words.

Reason. 1. Because they are new borne babes, and therefore weake.

2. Because God useth to bring his children by degrees unto perfection; so that at first they do perceive but a part or the first fruits of his goodnesse, and afterwards they have the whole, as it were shed abroad in their hearts.

3. Because in the beginning they want that experience, whereby the goodnesse of God afterwards is made more perfectly knowne unto them.

4. Because oftentimes they are also somewhat negligent; whereby it comes to passe, that they do not use the meanes of grace with that affection as they ought, as it is intimated in the

text, when they are stirred up to a more fervent desire of the word of God.

Vse 1. This may serve *for consolation* against those feares that arise sometimes in the soules of the godly, for that they have but a little measure of peace joy, and the like fruits of the Spirit, whereby men perceive the goodnesse of God towards them: for they must understand that the faithfull do usually perceive but a little measure of this grace at the beginning.

2. For exhortation, so much the more to long for the state of perfection, and not to rest in these small beginnings.

Doct. 11. *That taste of the grace of God which we either now have, or formerly had, should stirre us up to desire and seeke after the same more and more.*

This is gathered from the connexion of these words with those that went before.

Reason 1. Because to that end is there a taste of this grace given, to stirre up the appetite.

2. Because the goodnesse of God it selfe is in a manner contemned and vilified, if it be neglected, after it hath beene once tasted: & therefore in this respect they sinne more grievously, who when they have tasted this grace of God, do little esteem of it, then they, who out of ignorance make no reckoning of it at all.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those that have left their first love, *Apoc.* 2.4.

2. *To exhort us*, in meditating upon the goodnesse of God in Christ, and from the sense and experience that God hath given us of it heretofore, to inflame our mindes with an earnest desire to have a fuller measure of this grace, and to that purpose religiously to use all meanes, whereby it is usually communicated unto men.

Doct. 12. *The primary duty of Christians, whereby it is also that they are made Christians, is to come unto Christ.*

This is gathered out of the fourth verse. Now to come unto Christ, is nothing else but to believe in him. So *Iohn* 6.35. *He that comes unto me*, and *he that beleeves in me*, are made all one. So *Iohn* 5.40. *To come unto Christ, to receive Christ, and to believe in him*, are one and the same. And *Heb.* 10.22. We are said to draw neere by an assurance of faith.

Reason

Reason 1. Because our salvation depends upon that union which we have with Christ: whence it is also, that we are said to come unto Christ, that we may have life, *John* 5.40.

2. Because by nature we are strangers and far remote from Christ, and salvation obtained by him, yea and after that we are called unto Christ, we are not so perfectly conjoyned.

3. Because all Christian piety is nothing else, but a continuation and renovation of this accesse unto Christ, and by Christ unto God. In the hearing of the word we come unto Christ, as our Teacher; in our prayers we come unto him as our advocate; in the administration of the Lords Supper we come unto him as the Author of a Kingly mariage feast, Mat. 22. And all other duties do so depend upon these, that looke how we approve our selves in these, such must we needs be in the others also.

4. Because Christ cals and invites us especially unto this, to come unto him, Matth. 11.28. John 7.37.

Vse 1. This may serve to convince all those of death and of sinne, that have either no knowledge of Christ at all, or doe not endeavour according to that knowledge which they have, to come unto him, and partake of his grace.

2. To refute the Papists and such like, that draw men away from Christ to the holy Angels, to the Pope, and to themselves.

3. To exhort us, alwayes to set Christ before us, as our marke and scope, *Phil.* 3.8. *&c.*

Doct. 13. *We must come unto Christ as unto a living stone:* This is gathered from Verse 4. Now Christ is called *a stone* for that firme power, whereby he doth sustaine and beare up the edifice of the whole Church, Zach. 4.7. And he is called, *a living stone*, because that power whereby he doth beare up the Church is quickning, and communicates spirituall and eternall life to the whole edifice, John 5.26.

Reason 1. Because by sinne we were bereft of all life both the principle and foundation of life, nor can it be restored unto us any other way but in Christ.

2. Because unlesse we come unto Christ under this relation, we do not imbrace him as he was ordained by God, and is proposed unto us; and consequently we do not hold the true Christ, but a feined and imaginary one.

3. Because our faith cannot rest satisfied but in him that hath this strong power to quicken, for faith seekes life from a firme and undeceiving principle.

Use 1. This may serve to refute that blasphemy of the Papists, who will have the Pope, a dead stone, to be that rock or stone, whereupon the Church is built. For *Peter*, under the pretence of whose name the Pope challengeth this to himselfe never exhorted the faithfull to come to him as unto a living stone, but unto Christ only. And therefore *Peter* himselfe in these words explaines unto us, what was the minde of Christ, *Mat.*16.18. when he said: *Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church*, that is, upon this living stone whom *Peter* at that time confessed to be the Son of the living God, that is, the living stone. Now *Peter* and the Apostles together with the Prophets may be called the foundation of the Church by a Metonymy of the adjunct for the subject; because they laid and preached Christ as the true foundation, *Ephes.*2.20,21. but the Popes can in no other respect challenge this unto themselves, but as they are stones of offence and ruine.

2. To instruct us, wholly to depend upon Christ, and to put all our confidence in him.

3. To exhort us, with all joy and rejoycing to helpe forward the building of the Church upon Christ, shouting and crying out, as it is in the Prophet *Zachary*, *Grace, grace unto him.*

Doct. 14. *Christ is refused by men, when they will not come unto him as unto a living stone.*

This is gathered from the fourth Verse. So *Psalme* 118. 22. and *Luke* 2.34.

Reason 1. Because he hath not that outward Majestie and pompe wherewith naturall men are taken, *Isay* 53.3. 1 *Cor.* 1. 22,23.

2. Because men by nature are blinde, so that they cannot perceive their owne misery *extra Christum*, out of Christ, nor that salvation which is offered in Christ, 1 *Cor.* 2.14.

3. Because they too much love themselves, and put trust in themselves, so that they cannot endure that doctrine of Christ, whereby they are called to deny and forsake themselves, and to put their confidence in Christ alone.

Use 1.

Vse 1. This may serve to informe us, that we should attribute nothing to the world in those things which belong unto Christ.

2. To admonish us, not to trouble our mindes, for that the world is averse from Christ and true faith.

3. To exhort us, patiently to beare it, if we be refused and scorned by men; for the servant is not greater then his Master.

4. To instruct us to beware that we do not communicate in the least respect with the world in refusing of Christ.

Doct. 15. *Christ was chosen and ordained by God, that he should be excoeding precious unto us.*

This is gathered from the fourth verse. Now we must understand this so, as that we comprehend both the predestination of Christ, and the sending of him into the world, and his unction, together with all those testimonies, which were given by God unto this mysterie.

Reason 1. Because the love and mercy of God is so great towards us: for so God loved the world, that he gave his Sonne, &c. *Iohn* 3.16.

2. Because in the obedience of Christ God is well pleased, *Matth.* 3.17.

3. Because Christ hath perfected and finished all those things, which belong to our salvation and the glory of God.

Vse 1. This may serve *to enforme us*, that we ought to be assured of this, that howsoever the world opposeth it selfe against Christ, yet Christ shall prevaile and raigne for ever, because he is chosen of God.

2. To comfort all the faithfull, that beleeve and put their confidence in Christ, because they beleeve in him that was chosen of God, to save them.

3. To exhort us, in all our practise throughout the whole course of our lives, to make it appeare, that Christ is more precious to us, then all the things in the world, *Phil.* 3.8. *Prov.* 8.10, 11.

Doct. 16. *The faithfull are living members of the same building, whereof Christ is the foundation.*

This is gathered from the beginning of the 5. verse.

Reason 1. Because Christ together with all the faithfull makes one mysticall body, 1 *Cor.* 12.12. 2. Be-

2. Because being compacted in this body, they partake of the very life of Christ, *Ephes.* 4. 16.

3. Because they shew forth this life or power in bringing forth fruits answerable thereunto, *Iohn* 15. 5, 16.

Vse 1. This may serve *to comfort us*, when we rightly esteeme of the dignity of this condition, it will strengthen our mindes against all the troubles that can befall us therein.

2. To exhort us, so to carry our selves as it becommeth those, that are called to partake of the life of Christ.

Doct. 17. *By that union which all the faithfull have with Christ, they are made spirituall temples, Priests, and sacrifices acceptable to God.*

This is gathered from the 5 verse.

Reason 1. Because God is in an especiall manner present with them, and dwels in them by his Spirit and grace, as in his Temple, 2 *Cor.* 6. 16.

2. Because By the same spirit he makes them fit and ready to performe those duties, that are more acceptable unto him, then were ever any externall sacrifices, *Psalme* 51. 18, 19. *Heb.* 13. 16.

3. Because in performing these duties before God they do offer and dedicate themselves wholly unto God.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to have a care accordingly not to defile the Temple of God, 1 *Cor.* 3. 16, 17. that our Priesthood doth not dishonour God, and that our Sacrifices be not lame, and maimed, and such as are not acceptable unto God.

2. To exhort us, to addict our selves wholly to Gods glory and his worship; for God will be sanctified in those that draw neere him, *Levit.* 10. 3.

3. To refute the Papists, that rob Christians of this honour, and obtrude carnall Temples, priesthoods, and sacrifices upon God and men in stead of spirituall.

Doct. 18. *Those duties which we performe in Christ are acceptable unto God by Christ.*

This is gathered from the 5 verse, at the end. But they are acceptable not as merits, but as sacrifices of praise and thanksgiving, as it is intimated in the Text.

Reason 1. Because by Christ our persons are reconciled

unto

unto God, and received into the number of those whom God approves and by whom he delights to be worshipped.

2. Because Christ covers our infirmities.

3. Because by his intercession our duties are commended unto God.

Use 1. This may serve to comfort us, even when we looke upon our owne infirmities, and the unworthinesse of all our performances.

2. To exhort us, to go cheerefully about the duties of pietie, because our worke shall not be in vaine in the Lord, 1 *Cor.* 15. 58.

Doct. 19. *The same Christ was after the same manner a Saviour in the Old Testament, as he is in the New.*

This is gathered from the sixth Verse.

Reason 1. Because he was a Lambe slaine from the foundation of the world; according to the decree, promise, and acceptance of God, and according to the faith and hope of the godly, *Apoc.* 13. 8.

2. Because the Catholick Church is but one, consisting of all the faithfull from the beginning of the world, *Heb.* 12. 23.

Use 1. This may serve to refute those, that make the people of Israel either to have beene altogether carnall, or to have beene saved by the observation of the Law.

2. To exhort us to flye unto Christ, and to put our confidence in him, in whom all the faithfull from the creation of the world did put their trust, and by whom they were saved.

Doct. 20. *Christ is as it were the corner stone in the building of the Church.*

That is, he doth conjoyne, uphold and direct all the parts of the building, or members of the Church.

Reason 1. Because he is the beginning or foundation of the Church.

2. Because he unites those people that were before farre divided, the Jewes and Gentiles.

3. Because he is the rule or line of direction in all the building that tends to salvation.

Use 1. This may serve to refute the blasphemy of the Papists, whereby they make the Pope the head of the Church, and to that purpose wrest this very title and words thereunto.

2. To

2. To instruct us, wholly to depend upon Christ for the direction of our soules to everlasting life.

Doct. 21. *There is nothing at all that can be compared with Christ our Saviour for dignity, use, and excellency.*

This is gathered from these titles, *elect and precious.*

Reason 1. For the dignity of his person.

2. For the effectualnesse of his operation, in satisfaction, merit, and application of those things which belong unto our salvation.

3. For the excellency of those benefits which redound unto the Church by him.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to have no common conceit of Christ, or to rest in a vulgar esteeme of him, but earnestly to endeavour to conceive of him so, as his dignity and excellency doth deserve.

Doct. 22. *No man that truly beleeveth in Christ, shall ever be confounded, his expectation shall not be frustrated, his desire and confidence shall not be in vaine.*

Reason 1. Because Christ was appointed by God by a certaine and immutable decree to be the Saviour of all those that beleeve in him.

2. Because all power is given unto him both in heaven and earth.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us against those feares and doubts that might weaken our faith.

Doct. 23. *The faithfull are not only delivered from misery, but are also highly honoured by Christ.*

This is gathered from the seventh verse at the beginning.

Reason. Because they are made partakers of Christs honour, for in him they are made sonnes of God, heires of the everlasting kingdome, spirituall Priests and Kings.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove our blindnesse and dulnesse, that cannot discerne and esteeme of this honour as wee ought, but are set upon the honours of this world more then is fitting.

2. To exhort us, piously and seriously to glory in Christ and the honour which we have in him, though for his sake the wicked world reproach us.

Doct. 24.

Doct. 24. *As Christ is unto the unbeleevers honour and salvation, so he is unto the unbeleevers confusion and perdition.*

This is gathered out of the seventh Verse, *Psal.* 118.22. *Isay* 8.14. *Matth.*21.42.

But this similitude doth not hold in all things. For first, the proper end of Christ our Saviour was to save man, not to destroy him. Secondly, Christ is the cause of faith in the beleevers, but he is not the cause of unbeliefe in the unbeleevers, though something of Christ may be the occasion of their unbeliefe; like as his humiliation was both unto the Iewes and many of the Gentiles. Thirdly, Christ merited salvation for the believers, and not they themselves; but the unbelievers merit their owne perdition, and not Christ: but yet Christ is truly said to be confusion and perdition to the unbelievers, 1 As they take offence at him, and so runne headlong into their owne destruction. 2. As he doth justly punish their infidelity and impiety, as he is the just Iudge of all the world.

Reason 1. Because those unbelievers to whom Christ is offered, in contemning his goodnesse, doe directly as it were provoke him to use the greatest severity upon them.

2. Because by this meanes alone is the glory of God and of Christ preserved, when his enemies are put under his feet.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us to beware of all infidelity.

2. To exhort us, when we compare our beliefe with the misery of unbelievers, to learne to be thankfull unto God and to give him the glory of it in Iesus Christ: for these ends is this amplification made in the text.

Doct. 25. *Men come unto this confusion and perdition by stumbling at the Doctrine of the Gospell.*

This is gathered from the 8 Verse. Now men stumble at the word of the Gospell, when they apprehend the Gospell to be such, that they owe no assent and subjection thereunto: so the Iewes were offended at the infirmity of Christ crucified, 1 *Cor.* 1. 23. and the Greekes at the foolishnesse of that word which bringeth salvation, *Ibid.* For the Iewes, like as the Papists, with many others, are offended, for that the Gospell requires them to deny their owne righteousnesse and workes, and to seeke to be justified by Christ, *Rom.*9.32.

Reason 1. Because this offence is the cause of their infidelity.

2. Because it doth not produce a bare unbeliefe only, but unbeliefe with contempt, so that they doe infinitely wrong Christ.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to beware that we doe not in any thing stumble at the word of God, or conceive any thing in our mindes, whereby we may be in the least respect alienated from it.

Doct. 26. *The infidelity and confusion of the wicked doth not fall out by chance, but according as God had most certainly fore-ordained it.*

This is gathered from these words: *whereunto also they are appointed.*

Reason 1. Because God is both the King and Lord of all living creatures, so that nothing can happen unto them contrary to his will.

2. Because there can be no cause of their infidelity imagined, which God did not foresee, or which he could not have hindred.

3. Because we also which do believe, were aliens from the faith as well as they; neither did we make that difference betwixt our selves and them, but God:

Vse. This may serve to direct us, that the infidelity of any others whatsoever, may not deface our faith, we must give God the glory in the dispensation of his grace, and appointing of things according to his counsell, whose wayes are past finding out.

Doct. 27. *We should often call to mind that dignity, whereunto we are called in Christ, and that, by comparing of it to that misery wherein all unbelievers are plunged.*

This is gathered from that repetition, Verse 9. which is used comparatively by the dissimilitude that is betwixt it and the condition of unbelievers, before described, as it is intimated in that word *But.*

Reason 1. Because we are called to spirituall joy, which is chiefely increased by this meanes.

2. Because it belongs to the thanks which we ought to give unto God.

3. Because

3. Because it makes us cheerefull in the performing of all duties, that we may be worthy of so excellent a calling.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to make this contemplation familiar unto us.

Doct. 28. *The end of our calling, is to shew forth the praises of God, that hath called us.*

This is gathered from the ninth verse, that is, that we should render unto God the glory which hee hath shewed unto us. 1. In the inward thoughts and affections of our heart. 2. In the outward profession of words. 3. In our actions throughout the whole conversation of our lives. This is to sanctifie God, *Isay* 8.13.

Reason 1. Because this is that glory which may redound unto God from us, or from our calling.

2. Because our calling it selfe tends thereunto, that we should turne unto God, seeke God, glorifie God.

3. Because this is very profitable for us.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute those, that take care of nothing lesse: they shew that they are not yet partakers of effectuall calling.

2. To stirre us up more and more to fulfill this duty.

Doct. 29. *That state into which we are translated by our calling, is a state of marvellous light.*

This is gathered from the 9 Verse at the end, *Iohn* 1.8. Now it is called *light*, both for the illumination of the mind, which it brings; and for the comfort of heart, which we receive thereby: and it is called *marvellous*, because it farre surpasseth all worldly knowledge, and whatsoever the naturall man can conceive.

Vse. This may serve to us, to carry our selves answerable to this light, and to walke in it, not according to the common fashion, but marvellously.

Doct. 30. *It is very profitable for us alwayes to compare our present happy condition, with the misery that is past.*

This is gathered from the tenth verse.

Reason 1. Because *contraria juxta se posita magis elucescunt*, contraries being put one by another, make each other to appeare more cleerely.

2. Because it tends to our humiliation.

3. Because it makes us to commiserate others, and to shew meekenesse towards them. *Tit.* 3. 2. 3. 4.

4. *B*ecause it makes us to be the more thankfull unto God. 1. *Tim.* 1. 12. 13.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, never to forget that misery which did hang over our heads.

Verse. 11. *Dearely beloved, I beseech you, as strangers and pilgrims, abstaine from fleshly lusts, which warre against the Soule, Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles.*

Verse. 12. *That whereas they speake against you, as evill doers, they may by your good workes which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.*

The Analysis.

HEre the Apostle doth in generall exhort to lead such a life as is answerable to that happy condition, which was spoken of before: Now this life consists of two parts: The one is abstinence from evill, *abstaine from fleshly lusts*; the other is, to follow that which is good, *having your conversation honest*. The first of which he doth perswade them unto by an argument taken 1. From the disagreement that is betwixt the Godly, and the fleshly lusts of this world in respect of their state and condition, because in this world, they are strangers and Pilgrims, and therefore they ought not to set their hearts and desires upon this world, but upon another. 2. From the danger that hangs over them, from the desires of this world, because they tend to the destruction of their soules, in these words, *which warre against the Soule*. The second part together with the former, he doth perswade them unto, by an argument taken from those witnesses which they ought to have regard of in their conversation; *among the Gentiles*, by whose testimony hee shewes there will a twofold benefit arise from their honest conversation.

1. That they will cease to speake against them as evill doers.

2. That in beholding their good workes, they will not only give them an honest testimony, but they will also glorifie God for them; which benefit is shewed by the adjunct of time

time, wherein it should be expected, to wit, *in the day of visitation*: Now this whole exhortation, that it might be the more effectuall, and the more acceptable unto them, is set forth with a double affection, in the manner of proposing it; of love or charity, in that title which is given unto them, *Dearely beloved*; and of humility, in that he doth not so much commad these things, as intreat them, *I beseech you.*

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *All the faithfull are strangers and pilgrims in this world.*

Reas. 1. Because their father, and their countrey is not here, but in heaven.

2. Because they doe not desire to stay long here.

3. Because their wealth and their friends are not in this world.

4. Because the world accounts them strangers, and that because their conversation is not according to the fashion of the world.

Use. 1. This may serve *to admonish us*, not to place our inheritance or our treasure in the things of this World.

2. *To exhort us*, to lift up our hearts alwayes towards our heavenly countrey; and to gaine all those things, that may helpe us forward and further us in our journey thereunto,

Doct. 2. *All the faithfull ought to abstaine from the lusts of of the flesh.*

But by this phrase are signified not only the inclinations of the body, but all those that belong to the old man: for there is something to be sanctified even in the very spirit of our minds, 1 *Thes.* 5. 23. and therefore some lust of the flesh is seated in the spirit; but these lusts are in generall said to be of the flesh, because they are most of all manifested in those things which belong to the body and the flesh: for most men care for and looke after nothing else almost but those things that belong to this present life.

Reas. 1. Because the flesh together with the lusts thereof was crucified with Christ.

2. Because all the faithfull in their baptisme and by their profession have denyed the flesh.

3. Because our lusts are deceitfull. *Eph.* 4. 22.

Because they lead unto death. *Galat.* 6. 8. *Rom.* 8. 6. 13.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, above all things to apply our selves unto this study.

Doct. 3 *The lusts of the flesh warre against the soule.*

Reas. 1. Because they spoile the perfection of the soule, which consists in the image of God.

2. Because they doe either quench or grieve the holy Spirit, upon whom the comfort of the soule doth depend. *Eph.* 4. 30. 1. *Thess.* 5. 19.

3. Because they cause the Death of the soule, and lead thereunto.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to direct us*, alwayes to thinke upon our spirituall warfare, and accordingly in all things to carry our selves, as it becommeth the good Souldiers of Christ.

2. *To admonish us*, to take speciall heed of those enemies which we have within our selves; those enemies that are without can doe us no hurt, if those that are within have not power over us, and so doe as it were give us up into their hands.

Doct. 4. *To abstaine from fleshly lusts, is the way to make our conversation honest.*

Reas. 1. Because all filthynesse proceeds from the lusts of the flesh.

2. Because the true honour and honesty of a man consists in that spirituall victory which he hath over himselfe.

3. Because by overcomming the lusts of the flesh, the way is made easie to all vertues and good duties.

Vse 1. This may serve *to refute and reprove* those men, that seeke for honour and dignity by pampering the flesh, & obeying the lusts thereof.

2. *To exhort us*, cheerfully to oppose our selves against the lusts of the flesh, for this very cause, because it is a most honest thing.

Doct. 5. *The faithfull should have a care to live honestly, not only amongst the faithfull, but also amongst the unbeleeving Gentiles.*

This is gathered from these words, *among the Gentiles*; Which notwithstanding we must so understand, that we doe not follow all those things that seeme honest unto them, nor omit those things that doe displease them; but only that we

shew

shew forth a true evidence of our piety, love and righteousnesse in our conversation.

Then againe, that thereby their consciences may be convinced, that the way, which we goe, is in that respect at least praise-worthy, and to be approved.

Reas. This we ought to doe. 1. For Gods sake and his glory.

2. For our owne sakes and our owne comfort.

3. For the unbeleevers sake, to draw them unto true piety.

Vse. This may serve *to refute and reprove* those, that under colour of contemning fame, contemne vertue.

Doct. 6. *It is the property of unbeleevers, to seeke occasion to speake against the faithfull, as if they were wicked.*

This is gathered from the 12. verse, at the beginning. Now there are two kinds of such obloquies. 1. When they speake all manner of evill for Christs sake, for faith and righteousnesse sake, cap. 4. v. 14. *Matth.* 5. 11. 2. When they find some occasion in the defects of the faithfull, and observe something in their lives, which they may justly taxe. This also admits of a two fold difference; for sometimes such is the impiety of those that professe the true faith, that it gives scandall to the unbeleevers, *Rom.* 2. 24. and sometimes they take occasion from the infirmities that are incident to the faithfull, to condemne their profession.

Reas. 1. Because there is an inveterate enmity betwixt the children of the light, and the children of darknesse.

2. Because in this respect men flatter themselves, and in some sort seeme better and happier, when they make others, that would seeme better, either to be like themselves, or worse then themselves.

3. Because by this meanes they seeme to bring some prejudice against the very doctrine of piety, which the wicked hate.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, 1. To take speciall heed, that we have no communion with unbeleevers, in this maliciousnesse, that is, that we doe not willingly seeke or take occasion to speake against the Godly; for this is a certaine marke of impiety.

2. To beware also, that we give no occasion to the wicked, either

either to speake against our persons or our professions.

Doct. 7. *Good workes alone doe stop the mouthes of the wicked.*

This is gathered from the 12. v. at the middle.

Reas. 1. Because men, especially unbeleevers, cannot judge of us, but by the works which they see.

2. Because the sincerity of our religion properly appeares in our works.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, alwayes to endeavour to bring forth good works.

Doct. 8. *The good works of the faithfull make others also to glorifie God.*

This is gathered from the 12. v. at the end. So *M.* 5. 16.

Reas. 1. Because by this meanes they are convinced of the truth of our religion, whose author is God.

2. Because thereby they are drawne also to embrace the same religion, and to cleave unto God.

3. Because they are moved and stirred up to give God thanks, for those things that were the meanes of their conversion.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, to use this argument to stir up our selves to the practise of good works, because they make not only for our owne salvation, but for the glory of God also.

Doct. 9. *We must looke for a day of visitation, that men may glorifie God therein.*

This is gathered from the 12. v. at the end. But the day of visitation may be understood either *in judgement*, or *in grace and mercy*. Here it is to be understood of the grace of God. So *Luke* 1. 68.

Reas. Because without grace there is no inclination in the heart of man to glorifie God. The tree must be good, that shall bring forth good fruit; Men doe not gather grapes of thornes, or figges of thistles, *Matth.* 7. 16. 17.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, to use all patience and meeknesse towards the wicked, alwayes provided, that we doe not faile in our duty to seeke their conversion. 2. *Tim.* 2. 25.

Verse. 13.

Verse. 13. *Submit your selves therefore to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake ; whether it be to the King, as supreme;*

Verse. 14. *Or unto Governours, as unto them that are sent by him; for the punishment of evill doers, and for the praise of them that do well.*

Verse. 15. *For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.*

Verse. 16. *As free, and not using your liberty for a cloake of maliciousnesse, but as the servants of God.*

Verse. 17. *Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Feare God. Honour the King.*

The Analysis.

IN these words the Apostle sheweth that particular part of obedience, which did in a speciall manner pertaine to the honesty of the faithfull among the Gentiles, that is, subjection to the Magistrates, which some at that time did begin to cast off, as not agreeing with Christian liberty. Now this subjection he doth. 1. Generally command and direct us unto, to performe it for religion sake towards God, v. 13. 2. By a distribution of the object, to wit, that we ought to performe it, not only to the King and the supreme Magistrate, but also to the governours that are sent by him. v. 13. 14. 3. He doth perswade us thereunto, 1. From the end of this ordinance, to wit, that it is to represse and punish the evill doers, and to preserve and cherish the good v. 14. at the end. 2. From the efficient cause, or command of God, v. 15. 3. From the end and benefit of performing this subjection, to wit, to stop the mouthes of the enemies, who are described by their ignorance and their foolishnesse, v. 15. 4. He removes an objection that might be made against it, about Christian liberty. v. 16. Where he distinguisheth betwixt faigned liberty, which is joyned with maliciousnesse ; and true liberty, that makes men to be addicted unto the service of God : Now that this subjection to superiours belongs to the service of God, he shewes v. 17. by a short repetition of those precepts, that belong to this and the like duties.

Here a Question may be made.

Quest. Why is the Magistracy called an ordinance of man v. 13. seeing all powers are ordained of God, and every power is the ordinance of God, *Rom.* 13. 1. 2

Answ. The superiority of power, or government it selfe is simply and absolutely commanded by God, and in that respect is called the ordinance of God; but this or that speciall manner of power or government is not determined by God, but by men; and is therefore called *an ordinance of man*, which as touching the nature of it, may also be called *an ordinance of God:* And this is the difference betwixt an Ecclesiasticall and a civill office. An Ecclesiasticall office is not legitimate, if it be not directly determined by God himselfe, and consequently cannot be changed by men: but this or that civill office may be made & changed by men. And the reason of the difference is this, because God and Christ alone hath dominion and power in spirituall matters; but in civill matters men are also Gods, though not absolute.

The Doctrines arising from this.

Doct. 1. *The duties of righteousnesse towards men, doe much commend our religion towards God.*

This is gathered from the connexion of these words with the foregoing words, in that particle *therefore*. So *Iames* 1. 27.

Reas. 1. Because they are the effects of religion; Now the vertue of the cause doth alwayes appeare in the effect.

2. Because they are more obvious to the sight of man, then religion it selfe, which is the cause thereof.

3. Because they draw mens minds to approve of that religion whence they proceed.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, for religion sake to apply our selves to these duties.

Doct. 2. *We must performe civill subjection to our civill Magistrates for the Lords sake.*

This is gathered from the 13. v.

Reas. 1. Because by these meanes the Lord preserveth the societies of men.

2. Because these Governments are the meanes to advance Gods glory, at least so farre forth as they tend to performe some part of the will of God.

3. Because in their owne nature and of themselves they make

make for the good and against the bad. v. 14.

Use. 1. This may serve *to refute* the Anabaptists and others, who for conscience sake will not be subject to the Magistrate.

2. *To admonish us*, never so to subject our selves unto men, as that for their sakes we should neglect our duty towards God, because we ought to be subject unto them for the Lords sake, and therefore a farre greater subjection is due unto the Lord, then unto them.

Doct. 3. *By these duties the good will of God is observed, and the foolishnesse of wicked men is put to silence.*

This is gathered from v. 15.

Reas. 1. Because we serve God, when for conscience sake towards God, we are subject unto men; therefore we fulfill the will of God.

2. Because we doe that before men, which they doe usually praise most, and so we remove all occasion of offence.

Use. This may serve *to exhort us*, so much the more carefully to apply our selves to such duties.

Doct. 4. *Christian liberty is not contrary to that subjection, which we owe either unto God or man.*

This is gathered from v. 16.

Reas. 1. Because by it we are freed from sinne, but not from that duty, which is contrary unto sinne.

2. Because Christian liberty consists properly in spirituall things, and not in corporall; for although we are subject unto God alone in spirituall things, yet in corporall things we owe subjection unto men also.

3. Because for that end did we receive this liberty, that we might more freely and readily performe those things, which we owe unto God and men.

Use. This may serve *to condemne* those, that use Christian liberty for a cloake of maliciousnesse, as it is in the text.

Doct. 5. *We are to take exact notice of the difference of our duty towards men, towards our brethren, towards God, and towards the Magistrates.*

This is gathered from v. 17.

Reas. Because great is the difference of the grounds or reasons, whereupon these duties depend, as it is intimated in the text; but we must make conscience of our duty in all.

Vse. This may serve *to reprove those*, that doe any way sever or disjoyne these duties, to wit, such as seeme to feare God, but doe not love or honour men; or such as seeme to honour men, but doe not feare God at all.

Vers. 18. *Servants, be subject to your masters with all feare, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.*

Verse 19. *For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure griefe, suffering wrongfully.*

Verse 20. *For what glory is it, if when ye be buffetted for your faults ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye doe well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.*

Verse. 21. *For even hereunto were you called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps.*

V. 22. *Who did not sinne, neither was guile found in his mouth?*

V. 23. *Who when he was reviled, reviled not againe; when hee suffered, he threatned not, but committed* himselfe *to him, that judgeth righteously.*

V. 24. *Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his owne body on the tree, that we being dead to sinnes, should live unto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.*

V. 25. *For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned unto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.*

The Analysis.

HEre the Apostle makes a speciall exhortation about the duty of servants to their masters: and this duty he doth 1. As it were define by a speciall kind of subjection wherein it consists. *Be subject with all feare.* 2. He doth illustrate it by a distribution of the object, or the masters, to whom this subjection is due; *not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.* 3. He proves that this subjection is to be made to both sorts, by an argument taken from the adjuncts thereof, grace and glory, that is, Gods praising and approving of it, which accompanies the subjection that is made unto wicked masters verse 19. *For this* is *thank-worthy.* The reason of which consequence

sequence is set forth. 1. By a description of that subjection which is due unto wicked Masters, to wit, that it is *a patient suffering of wrong for conscience towards God* v. 19. 2. By a comparison that is made betwixt those that suffer justly, and those that suffer unjustly, which he shewes to be unlike, in that the former can looke for no glory from their sufferings, but the latter may expect great glory, *verse* 20. In the second place, he proves the same duty from that relation which ariseth from our generall calling, because we are thereunto called, that we should patiently suffer the injuries of the world: and this he confirmes by the example of Christ; to whose imitation we are called: for he shewes two ends of the suffering of Christ; one was to dye for us, that is, to expiate our sinnes, which is the primary end. The other was, to leave us an example to imitate. *verse* 21. which is the secondary end. Now a speciall part of this secondary end was, that when he was without sinne *v.* 22. Yet he patiently suffered all kinds of reproaches and afflictions, *v.* 23. And the primary end of Christs sufferings, which was to redeeme us from sin, is upon this occasion also declared *v.* 24. 25. Because therehence also may be drawne a powerfull argument, to perswade us to imitate Christ in doing righteously, and suffering unjustly: And this is declared, 1. From the nature of Christs death, that it was a sacrifice for our sins to take away the guilt of them; 2. From the end of this propitiation, which is the death of sinne, and the life of righteousnesse. And hereof there is an illustration made by comparing that condition, which went before our conversion, with that condition which followes it, *verse* the last.

The Doctrines drawne here-hence.

Doct. 1. *They that are in the lowest condition, should by their good workes glorifie God in that condition.*

This is gathered from the connexion of the 18 Verse with the 11 and 12.

Reason 1. Because servants also are called to liberty and glory in Christ, neither is there any difference, as touching life spirituall, betwixt the freeman and the servant, 1 *Cor.* 7. 22.

2. Because there is the same reward for servants and freemen.

3. Because the servile condition hath a proper occasion and meanes to glorifie God, which other conditions have not; like as other conditions have their occasions & meanes, which the servile hath not.

Vse 1. This may serve to comfort us, in regard that no man is excluded from having a part in this honour, that hath a part in advancing the glory of God.

2. To exhort all, both servants and all other sorts of men, to endeavour to promote Gods glory: for if servants ought to do this; much more ought free masters, and those that are in any place of dignity.

Doct. 2. *Servants, to the end that they may glorifie God in their servile condition, must be subject to their Masters with all feare.*

Reason 1. Because subjection to another mans will is properly that wherein service consists; and therefore all they that are bound as servants, are bound to subjection.

2. Because the subjection of a servant is such, that it doth necessarily command a feare to displease, not only in that respect, because in every duty, both towards God and man, we should feare to offend by doing amisse, but also in respect of that singular power, which masters have to punish their servants. This is that feare, which we usually call servile, which is not to be disliked in servants, though in the children of God there be another feare required over and above, which ariseth from love.

Vse. This may serve to admonish, first, Servants and subjects, not to separate feare from subjection. Secondly, all men to subject themselves to God with all feare, as it becommeth servants.

Doct. 3. *We ought to performe our duty, even unto wicked men and froward.*

This is gathered from the 18 Verse.

Reason 1. Because the ground of our duty doth not consist in the goodnesse or naughtinesse of men, but in that obligation which the law of God imposeth upon us, which may consist with the naughtinesse of men.

2. Because

2. Because in performing this duty, wee serve God and Christ, and shall receive a reward from him, *Ephes.* 6.5,6,7,8.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those, that direct their duties according to the persons of the men with whom they have to doe.

Doct. 4. *We ought to doe our duty for conscience toward God, though we are wrongfully afflicted by men.*

This is gathered from Verse 19.

Reason 1. Because conscience alwayes lookes to the judgement of God and not to the qualities and judgements of men.

2. Because the conscience is by this meanes constant, immutable, and alwayes like it selfe, howsoever mens judgements may alter.

Vse. This may serve to direct us in all our actions to have a speciall respect to the conscience.

Doct. 5. *It is thank-worthy, and we shall receive glory from God, if we suffer wrongfully, and not justly.*

This is gathered from the 19 and 20 verses.

Reason. 1. Because this is proper and peculiar to Christians, as is the love of our enemies, *Matth* 5.44,45.

2. Because by this meanes we give great glory unto God, when we suffer the bitterest things out of conscience toward him.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, cheerefully to set our selves to the performing of these duties.

Doct. 6. *The calling of Christians doth in a speciall manner lead to the patient suffering of afflictions.*

This is gathered from the 21 verse, at the beginning.

Reason 1. Because they are called unto glory by the enduring of all kindes of afflictions, as by the way that leadeth thereunto, cap. 5. verse 10.

2. Because they are called to overcome their enemies and evill doers by well-doing, and if it be possible to winne them thereby, *Matth.* 5.44. *Rom.* 12.21.

3. Because they are called to imitate Christ, as it is in the text.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to imitate or follow the men of the world in these things, because we have another manner of calling.

2. To

2. To exhort us to have a great care that we make conscience of this duty, because it doth most neerely belong to our calling.

Doct. 7. *Christs actions are a most perfect example for our duty and calling.*

This is gathered from Verse 21.

Reason 1. Because Christ is unto us an example given by God, as it were the *praxis* of Divinity and rule of living well.

2. Because he hath no imperfection at all, such as may be found in all mens examples.

3. Because the Spirit of Christ makes us to be conformable unto his image.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, that beholding Christ as it were in a glasse, we may be as it were changed into the same image from glory to glory, 2 *Cor.* 3. 18.

Doct. 8. *The Chiefest manner of imitating Christ in enduring afflictions, consists in this, that we commit our cause unto God.*

This is gathered from verse 23, at the end.

Reason. Because this is the rule of patience in such cases, not to revenge our selves, but to commit the whole businesse unto the Lord, and to rest well contented and pleased in his will.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, never to please our own carnall will, but to subject our selves wholly to the good will of God.

Doct. 9. *Christ by his death did not only leave us an example of our lives, but also expiated our sinnes, and procured for us such power, whereby we may imitate him in living well.*

This is gathered from verse 24.

Reason 1. Because after the same manner are we restored in Christ, as we were lost in *Adam*, which was not by imitation and example only, *Rom.* 5.

2. Because Christ ought to be a sacrifice to pacifie God towards us, which is not done by example.

3. Because an example would have nothing at all profited those that were dead in sinne and hated of God.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute the Socinians and others, which feine that the redemption of Christ consists in doctrine and example only.

2. To

2. To direct us, alwayes to joyne these two together, redemption, and the example of Christ.

Doct. 10. *Without Christ we are nothing else but sheepe going astray and lost.*

This is gathered from the last verse.

Reason. Because upon him alone depends our salvation and the direction of our lives.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to leave Christ so much as in the least thing, but to cleave faster and faster unto him.

Chapter III.

Verse 1. *Likewise yee wives be in subjection to your owne husbands, that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be wonne by the conversation of the wives.*

Verse 2. *While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with feare:*

Verse 3. *Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the haire, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparell.*

Verse 4. *But* let it be *the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible,* even the ornament *of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.*

Verse 5. *For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their owne husbands.*

Verse 6. *Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord, whose daughters yee are as long as yee do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.*

Verse 7. *Likewise ye husbands dwell with them according to the knowledge* of God, *giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessell, and as being heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred.*

The Analysis.

HEre the Apostle instructs Wives and Husbands in those particular duties which belong unto their conjugall society. And he sets downe the duty of wives in the first place, because that comes neerest unto those duties which hee had lately spoken of, namely, the duty of subjects towards their Magistrates, and of servants towards their Masters. For that which is here in generall prescribed unto wives, is their subjection to their husbands, Verse 1. *Be in subjection to your owne husbands.* Which subjection he doth afterwards explaine by certaine adjuncts or properties, which do in a peculiar manner belong to the subjection of wives, and not to the subjection of servants and subjects. The first of these properties is, conjugall feare, vers. 2. The second is chastity of conversation, in the same verse. The third is, meeknesse and mildnesse, verse 4. And he doth perswade them unto this subjection together with the properties thereof. 1. By an argument taken from the effects and fruit, which by the grace of God might follow thereupon; for it is a meanes tending to the conversion of their husbands, if they obey not the Gospell, verse 1. 2. He commends and illustrates it by a comparison which he makes betwixt that pious subjection, & that adorning which women use to make great account of, verse 3,4. where he shewes that outward adorning to be nothing worth in Gods sight. 3. Hee doth perswade them unto it by the example of those holy women, which God did approve of in old time, verse 5. And in particular by the example of *Sara*, and her obedience unto *Abraham*, verse 6. Of whose example he gives a speciall reason; because as *Abraham* was the father of all the faithfull, so *Sara* in some sort might be called the mother of all holy women. The duty of husbands he sets down 1, in generall, in their husband-like governement, which he cals a dwelling with their wives according to knowledge, which knowledge and understanding is the ground of direction, and therefore is more required in a man, then in a woman. 2. In the speciall manner of this governement, to wit, that it should be joyned with the honour

of

of the wife, in bearing with her infirmities, which he doth perswade them unto by an argument taken, 1. from that society and equality which is betwixt the husband and the wife, in respect of the grace of life, as it is here called. 2. From the great discommodity, which will follow upon the neglect of this duty, for by their domesticall differences and dissentions their domesticall prayers also are hindred, Verse 7.

The Doctrines arising here-hence.

Doct. 1. *There is the like duty of subjects, servants, wives, and husbands.*

This is gathered from that particle, *Likewise ye wives*, verse 1. and *Likewise ye husbands*, verse 7. Not, that there is the same kinde of duty in all these in all respects, but that there is the same kinde of obligation, whereby every one is bound to doe his owne duty.

Reason 1. Because it is the same Law-giver and the same law that commands every man his duty.

2. Because the disparity of the condition makes no disparity in the obligation, which is the formality of the duty; but only in those things, to which the obligation binds us, which is the materiality of the duty.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to cast off from our selves those things which we either reade or heare to be commanded men of another condition, but alwayes to consider, that *quamvis non ad similia, tamen similiter*, though we are not tyed to the like duties, yet we are in the like manner tyed to our own duties: when servants are commanded any thing, then masters should think, that they likewise are commanded something; when wives are commanded any thing, then husbands should think that they likewise; and when husbands are commanded any thing, then wives should think, that they likewise.

Doct. 2 *It is the duty of wives to be subject to their husbands.*

This is gathered from verse 1. See *Colos.* 3.18. *Ephes.* 5.22, 23, 24.

Reason 1. Because the husband is the head of the wife, *Ephes.* 5.23: 1 *Cor.* 11.3.

2. Because there can be no order kept in a family, except all the rest be subject to the father of the family.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those wives that are undutifull and will not be subject; and those husbands also, who by their owne fault lose this authority and dignity, and are themselves the causes that their owne power is lessened and diminished.

Doct. 3. *The conversation of wives should be such, that it should winne their husbands to approve of the true religion.*

This is gathered from verse 1.

Reason 1. Because all should, as much as they can, co-operate with God for the conversion of men.

2. Because this generall Christian duty is in a speciall manner determined and intended in respect of those, with whom we have a neerer communion.

3. Because love, which doth in a singular manner belong to man and wife, requires that they should desire and seek for one anothers greatest good.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those, which in wedlock so live, that they have no care at all, either to advance Gods glory, or to further their own salvation, in that state: and they are to be condemned much more, which so carry themselves in that state, that they doe more and more alienate their husbands from true religion and piety either touching the doctrine, or touching the practise of it. And if this belongs to wives toward their husbands, much more will it belong to husbands toward their wives.

Doct. 4. *Conjugall chastity should be joyned with feare.*

This is gathered from verse 2.

Reason. Because not only is impurity to be shunned, but also all suspicion of impurity, or of a minde inclining thereunto.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish man and wife, to shun all those courses, that may any way be any blemish to their chastity, though it be but in shew or appearance.

2. To admonish all Christians, to preserve their spirituall chastity with Christ and God, with all feare.

Doct. 5. *It is not the outward adorning, but the inward, that we should make account of.*

This is gathered from verse 3, 4.

Reason 1. Because the outward adorning belongs to the vanity

vanity of this world, but the inward is spirituall life it selfe. For Christ and grace is called the inward adorning of the heart or minde, because it makes a man amiable and commends him in the sight of those which esteeme and prize it.

2. Because only men look after the outward adorning, and and those none of the graver sort neither; but God himselfe lookes after the inward, as it is in verse 4.

3. *Because* the outward adorning is not durable, but the inward is incorruptible, as it is in verse 4. *which is not corruptible*, and 2 *Cor.* 4. 18.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, every day more and more to renounce this outward and worldly adorning, and to looke to the inward and true adorning of the mind and soule.

Doct. 6. *Meekenesse and mildenesse of spirit in women, as in all others also, is an adorning that is precious in the sight of God.*

This is gathered from verse 4.

Reason 1. *Because* many filthy unbeseeming things, which arise from anger and perturbation of the minde, are removed by such a disposition.

2. *Because* such a disposition is very apt to please, and all men desire that others should be well pleased with their behaviour.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute those, which affect a kind of glory and honour by their fierceneese and impatiency.

2. To exhort us, not only for civility sake, but also for conscience toward God to endeavour to get such a disposition.

Doct. 7. *Every man should seeke for examples of such vertues out of Scripture, and apply them unto himselfe according to his owne proper condition.*

For women have holy women proposed unto them for examples, verse 5. So have men holy men.

Doct. 8. *In weighing of examples we should have the chiefest regard to those that are most commended in Scripture.*

This is gathered from those words, *Abraham, Sara, and the like*, verse 6.

Doct. 9. *Then and not before are we the children of such holy ones, by a true imitation of them, when we do so persist in well doing, that no terrour or any other temptation is able to remove us from this our purpose and resolution.*

This

This is gathered from the 6. verse at the end. For this is proposed in *Sara* to be chiefly imitated by women, that out of her duty, she followed *Abraham* in all his journey, nor could any terrour keepe her back.

Doct. 10. *Husbands should likewise doe their duty, as well as the wives doe theirs.*

This is gathered from verse 7.

Reas. 1. Because there is the same obligation of Gods law on both sides.

2. Because there is a mutuall relation betwixt these duties, that one doth necessarily require the other.

3. Because the duty of husbands to their wives, and of wives to their husbands is almost the same, but that the wife is to doe her part with subjection, and it is the husbands part to rule.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish us*, not rigidly to exact the duty of others, and in the meane time to neglect our owne.

Doct. 11. *It belongs unto men to excell in knowledge and understanding.*

This is gathered from those words: *according to knowledge.*

Reas. 1. Because by nature they have a kind of perfection above women in those things which belong unto knowledge, whereupon the woman is in this place called the weaker vessell.

2. Because by their duty they should be the heads of their wives, to direct and governe them.

3. Because they have greater meanes to gaine knowledge; for as it is not lawfull for women to speake in the Church; so neither have they any thing to doe in other exercises, whereby mens wits are ripened.

Vse. This may serve *to reprove* those men, that either through drunkennesse, or sloth, or the neglect of divine things, or through too much care of earthly things, doe not only come behind women, but children also in sound knowledge and understanding.

Doct. 12. *It is the husbands part to be meeke unto their wives, and not to put them in feare.*

Reas. 1. Because they are not servants, but companions.

2. Be-

2. Because their conjugall love should shew it selfe in all such duties.

Vse. This may serve *to admonish* as well husbands as wives to beware of harshnesse and bitternesse.

Doct. 13. *That duty which we owe unto all the coheires of grace and life eternall, should direct and governe our particular duties towards our superiours, inferiours and equalls.*

Reas. 1. Because that is the principall duty; to which all the rest are subordinate.

2. Because that love doth vertually at least containe in it all vertues.

3. Because the dignity which redounds from the relation to grace and eternall life, makes all those that are partakers of that grace, in some sort equall, and therefore restraines contempt, opposition, and all kinds of injuries.

Vse. This may serve *to direct us*, in all parts of our conversation with Christian men, to have chiefe regard to this duty.

Doct. 14. *All our conversation, as well in publique as in private, should be so ordered, that it should not hinder, but rather further our Prayers.*

This is gathered from the last words.

Reas. 1. Because otherwise we should wrong God himselfe, in violating his honour.

2. Because we should diminish at least our greatest comfort, which depends upon our prayers.

Vse, This may serve *to admonish us,* to take heed therefore, not only of the grosser sort of sins, but also of contentions, injuries, perturbations, and all those vanities, by which we are made unfit to call upon the name of God aright.

Verse 8. *Finally,* be ye *all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pittifull, be courteous.*

V. 9. *Not rendring evill for evill, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.*

The

The Analysis.

THe Apostle doth in these two verses briefely comprehend those duties, which belong unto all sorts of men. For because it would be too long particularly to describe all the particular vertues, nor can there be such a doctrine delivered, that should direct * every particular man in his duty, * *singulos qua singulos*, as such a particular man, as before it was delivered touching masters and servants, wives and husbands, therefore he doth here commend some generall duties unto all, from which all particular ones will easily follow. And the first of these is Concord. 2. Mutuall sympathy. 3. Brotherly love. 4. Pitty. 5. Courteousnesse. 6. Christian Patience, whereby we doe not only forbeare to curse those that curse us, but also blesse them; of which last duty, as being the difficultest of all, he gives a speciall reason, which is taken from the end of our calling, whereby we come to the possession of all blessings, and as much as in us lyes, ought we to communicate it unto others.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Concord is a vertue, which all Christians should mightily labour for.*

Reas. 1. Because God hath endued all those, that are truly faithfull, with one and the same Spirit, and therefore with one heart as it were. For they have received a new heart of one and the same making and nature.

2. Because they propose unto themselves one and the same end, and they should goe one and the same way unto that end.

3. Because if there be any difference in other things, which doe not belong unto that way, they are not so great, as that they should cause any discord: For there may be some difference of opinions in many things without any discord or alienation of mens minds. And if there be some difference about those things, which doe belong unto that way, a bearing one with another, when they doe both earnestly desire the truth, will preserve concord safe and sound betwixt those

which

which are true Christians, according to that of the Apostle *Philip.* 3. 15. 16.

Vse. This may serve *to reprove* those, which for light causes are estranged from their brethren, and turne the smallest difference, even the least controversie into discord. And how many are guilty of this fault, and how closely it sticks unto them, may evidently appeare by this, that they cannot lay aside their anger and hatred, no not for Gods sake, for Christ sake, and their owne salvation sake. And this we may see in too too many, when they forbeare to come to the Lords Supper by reason of those contentions, which they maintaine betwixt themselves and their neighbours; for they doe thereby shew that they cannot pray unto God to forgive them their trespasses, as they forgive others that trespasse against them, and therefore they seeme to love discord more then God himselfe, and their owne salvation.

Doct. 2. *There should be a sympathy betwixt Christians.*

By which word is signified not only a fellow-feeling of one anothers troubles, but also of one anothers good, 1 *Cor.* 12. 26.

Reas. 1. Because they are members of one body, and all the members looke unto the good of the whole.

2. Because the evill or good of one member, doth in some sort redound unto the rest of the members, by that neere union and communion, which is betwixt them.

3. Because the consent and concord of their wills commands this, that whereof one doth rejoyce or grieve, the other also should rejoyce and grieve.

Vse. This may serve *to reprove* that Stoicall hardnesse, which hath taken hold of mens minds, whereby it comes to passe that they are no way sensible of the condition of others.

Doct. 3. *Brotherly love is moreover greatly to be embraced, which unto concord and Sympathy addes a will also and endeavour to doe good unto others as unto our brethren.*

Reas. 1 Because we are brethren.

2. Because love is the character of Christian brotherhood.

3. Because love is the bond of perfection and the meanes of Christian edification.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us* to the exercise of this grace.

Doct. 4. *To our love we should joyne mercy, which lookes only unto the good that is to be done.*

Reas. 1. Because true love is by this meanes made most manifest, when it is shewed unto those which cannot give us thankes.

2. Because in this we doe imitate our heavenly Father, who is the Father of mercies.

3. Because the same benefit is greater, when it is bestowed upon one that is in misery, then when it is bestowed upon another.

Use. This may serve *to reprove* those, which seeme to love such men only, from whom they may expect something.

Doct. 5. *Together with our love and mercy we should joyne courteousnesse.*

Reas. 1. Because true love and mercy proceeding from the enlargement of the heart, fits and disposeth the whole man for the doing of good.

2. Because a benefit bestowed in a rough and harsh manner, doth in some sort cease to be a benefit.

Use. This may serve *to admonish us*, more and more to lay aside all severity, and to have a care to beautifie that good which we doe, in the manner of doing it.

Doct. 6. *Christians should not render evill for evill, or railing for railing.*

This is gathered out of the 9. verse. So *Rom.* 12. 17. and *Matth.* 5. 39.

Reas. 1. Because the railing or ill-doing of another, doth not loose the bond, or take away the duty of our love.

2. Because this is to be overcome of evil. *Rom.* 12. 21.

3. Because this derogates from Gods fidelity, and takes that, which belongs unto him, out of his hands, *Rom.* 12. 19. *Prov.* 22. 23.

Use. This may serve *to reprove* those men, that are easily provoked, and when they are provoked by any injury, thinke that they may doe any thing, and so give themselves liberty to exercise all kind of revenge: and that they doe not this from the hatred of sinne, but from too much love of themselves, it doth sufficiently appeare by this, that when more hainous and grievous offences are committed against God,

and

and the same wrongs done unto others; they can heare it and behold it, and never be troubled at it.

Doct. 7. *It is the duty of Christians to blesse those that curse and wrong them.*

This is gathered from the 9. v. at the middle. So *Matth.* 5. 44. and *Rom.* 12. 14.

Reas. 1. *Because* love and mercy doth in a speciall manner require this duty of those, which by such like sinnes make themselves obnoxious unto cursing.

2. *Because* we should overcome evill with good. *Rom.* 12. 21.

3. *Because* we should imitate our heavenly Father. *Matth.* 5. 45.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us* to use our selves unto this perfection.

Doct. 8. *The remembrance of our calling, that it tends unto blessing, should stir us up to blesse others.*

This is gathered from v. 9. at the latter end.

Reas. 1. Because that which we have freely received from the blessing of God, we should, as much as in us lies, freely and liberally give. *Matth.* 10. 8.

2. Because by this meanes we exercise and perfect our owne calling.

3. Because by this meanes we shew forth and advance the glory of God, that bestowed this benefit upon us.

Vse. This may serve *for direction*, very often to meditate upon our calling, and that to this end, that we may be made the more ready and fit for Christian duties.

Verse. 10. *For he that will love life, and see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from evill, and his lips that they speake no guile:*

Verse. 11, *Let him eschew evill. and doe good, let him seeke peace and ensue it.*

Verse. *For the eyes of the Lord* are set *over the righteous, and his eares are* open *unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that doe evill.*

The Analysis.

IN these three verses, the Apostle proves by the testimony of Scripture, that which he had spoken in the last place, to wit, that Godly men shall inherit a blessing. In which testimony there is in the first place the blessing set downe, which all desire, *He that will love life, and see good dayes.* 2. The piety of those, to whom this blessing is promised, is synecdochically declared by a distribution of the subjects, as it is in the speech, v. 10. or in the deeds and conversation of life v. 11. 3. The connexion of the blessing, with this piety is confirmed by the most powerfull cause thereof, namely, the providence of God, watching over the Godly for their good, verse 12. at the beginning. Which is illustrated by a contrary effect of the same providence toward those that doe evill, namely, that he watcheth over those alwayes for evills, v. 12. at the end.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *It is common unto all men, in some sort to desire blessing and happinesse.*

For therefore doth he in this place, use a common argument to stirre up all to the practice of piety.

Reas. 1. Because * *omnia appetunt bonum*, all things desire their own good, & in some sort too that which they apprehend as *summum bonum*, the chiefest good.

2. Because all nature tends unto its owne perfection, and this perfection is happinesse.

3. Because the nature of happinesse is such, that if the understanding doth in any manner comprehend it, the will cannot but in some measure desire it, because it is in all respects desireable.

Use. 1. Let us not therefore rest contented with a confused desire of happinesse, but endeavour and labour to stirre up and to increase in our selves the true, genuine and effectuall desire thereof.

2. *For direction*, not to corrupt this desire that is approved of God, or to choake it with worldly desires, but to goe forward and increase it daily according to that rule, which is given unto us from God.

Doct. 2.

Doct. 2. *True and solid piety is the only way to attaine unto these blessings.*

Reas. 1. Because God hath promised it to the Godly alone.

2. Because piety in its owne nature leadeth to God, and joynes us with God, who is the fountaine of all good.

3. Because piety it selfe hath that perfection joyned with it, namely, peace of conscience and sound consolation, which is a great part of happinesse.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to convince* those of folly and madnesse, that would be happy, but will not be Godly.

2. *To direct us*, to kindle in our hearts an earnest endeavour to be godly by the expectation of this happinesse, and to gaine unto our selves an assurance of it.

Doct. 3. *The providence of God alone, makes for the furtherance of this piety, and the confirmation of this happinesse.*

This is gathered from v. 12.

Reas. 1. Because God by his providence doth fulfill and perfect all his promises.

2. Because the same providence lookes over and takes care for the particular necessities of the Godly.

3. Because he takes speciall notice of all their desires and prayers, as it is in the text.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us*, to build up our selves in a true and lively faith of this providence.

Verse. 13. *And who is he that will harme you, if ye be followers of that which is Good?*

Verse. 14. *But and if ye suffer* any thing *for righteousnesse sake, happy* are ye, *and be not afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled.*

Verse. 15. *But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and bee ready alwayes to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and feare, having a good conscience:*

Verse. 16. *That whereas they speake evill of you, as of evill doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ.*

The Analysis.

THat which the Apostle had before proposed concerning the practise of piety, he doth there perswade them unto by an argument taken, 1. from the effect thereof, that by this meanes men are freed and delivered from those harmes, which the wicked seek occasion to bring upon them, v. 13. 2. From the happinesse adjoyned, because no afflictions that are suffered for righteousnesse and godlinesse sake, are able to exclude that, verse 14. at the beginning. 3. He shewes the right manner of undergoing afflictions, so that happinesse may follow thereupon, which consists 1. in the laying aside of that feare and perturbation, which usually mens mindes are troubled with in their afflictions, in these words, *be not afraid of their terrour.* 2. In that confidence and relyance of our hearts upon God, whereby his name is sanctified, and by vertue whereof that immoderate feare may be laid aside. And this confidence is set forth by its proper effect, which consists in couragious and ready confession of the faith; of which confession he sets downe two properties, namely, *meekenesse* and *feare* or *reverence*, and moreover he shewes the helping and preserving cause thereof, namely, a good conscience, and the effect also which it will worke in others, verse 16. to wit, that it will make their enemies with shame to leave off their speaking evill of them.

But here-hence ariseth a question.

Quest. How can this be made good, which the Apostle saith, that no man shall harme the godly? Verse 13.

Answer 1. *Because* the nature of godlinesse and goodnesse tends thereunto, to winne the minds of all men, and to take off all ill-will.

2. Because often times also it hath this effect, that taking away all pretence and occasion of unrighteousnesse, it doth in some measure mollifie the enemies minds, except they be quite and cleane savage and furiously mad.

3. Because *nemo propriè læditur nisi à seipso*, no body is properly hurt but by himselfe and his own fault; he therefore that eschewеth evill and doeth good, cannot properly be said to

be

be hurt by others, though they do earnestly desire and endeavour to do it.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Christians should be emulators and followers of that which is good.*

This is gathered from verse 13.

Reason 1. Because they are called to the imitation of Gods goodnesse: *Be ye holy as I am holy: be ye perfect as your Father is perfect.*

2. Because they are begotten again unto the image of God, and should daily more and more be fashioned thereunto.

3. Because there is nothing besides that is worthy of our serious imitation.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to lift up our mindes, and betake our selves to this holy and divine emulation.

Doct. 2. *They that are followers of that which is good are freed from harme.*

This is gathered from verse 13.

Reason 1. Because *if God be for us, who can be against us?* 2. Because wicked mens minds also are oftentimes overcome by the goodnesse of the good: as *Esau* was moved by the obsequiousnesse of *Iacob.*

3. Because the greatest good cannot be taken away from those that labour for true godlinesse.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us against all dangers which may befall us by following that which is good.

Doct. 3. *To suffer afflictions for righteousnesse sake doth not hinder, but further our happinesse.*

This is gathered from Verse 14. So *Matth.* 5. 10.

Reason 1. Because such afflictions make us conformable unto Christ in the fellowship of his sufferings, *Phil.* 3. 10.

2. Because it is a singular part of that obedience and holinesse, which tends unto happinesse.

3. Because God hath promised bountifully to reward it.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us, against all the evils which may befall us for righteousnesse sake and a good conscience.

Doct. 4. *We must lay aside the feare of all dangers wherewith our mind may be troubled.*

This

This is gathered from the same verse at the end.

Reason 1. Because such feare is contrary unto faith and a sure confidence.

2. Because it hath no other use, but to hinder us in doing of our duty.

3. Because it is contrary to the honour of God and the worthinesse of a good cause.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us not to give place to such pusillanimity and faint-heartednesse.

Doct. 5. *We should strengthen our hearts against all feare, by putting our trust in God.*

Reason 1. Because there is nothing else whereby we can overcome all feares and terrours.

2. Because God hath taken this upon himselfe, and commanded us to commit our cause unto him.

3. Because by this trust and confidence God is made the strength of our soules.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, truly to put our trust in God.

Doct. 6. *By this trust and confidence we sanctifie God in our hearts.*

This is gathered from verse 15.

Reason 1. Because thereby we acknowledge him to be a holy God, that is, a God of perfect power, mercy, truth and fidelity.

2. Because by the effectuall acknowledgement of this holinesse we give unto him that glory which is due unto his name from our hearts.

3. Because thereby we advance his glory amongst others, as well in our actions as in our professions.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, wholly to rely upon him.

Doct. 7. *We should sanctifie God not only in our hearts, but with our mouths also, and in our profession.*

This is gathered from these words: *Be ready alwayes to give an answer.* So *Rom.* 10. 10.

Reason 1. Because we should glorifie God not only in our spirit, but in our body also, 1 *Cor.* 6. 20.

2. Because we should advance Gods glory, not only in our selves, but amongst others also.

3. Because

3. Because out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh: we cannot therefore sanctifie God with all our heart, unlesse we are ready to do the same likewise with our mouth.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, which boast of the sincerity of their heart, and in the meane time take no care for the holinesse of their heart and words.

2. To exhort us to prepare our selves for this duty, *Ephes.* 4. 29.

Doct. 8. *All Christians should be ready not only to professe the truth, but also to give a good reason of their profession.*

This is gathered from these words: *to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you.* And this is not to be understood of all truth, but of the truth of religion; nor of all these things neither, which do any way pertain unto religion, but of the very substance of faith, hope, and religion, as it is in the text: *a reason of the hope that is in you:* nor is it either a naturall reason that is required, or such a kinde of reason that may stop the mouths of every gainsayer; for this all are not able to do, nor doth it belong unto all; but some sure ground out of Gods word, whereupon our faith and hope should be built and strengthened against all kinde of temptations. Now here ariseth a question.

Quest. Whether such a reason is to be given to every one that asketh, or no?

Answ. No not absolutely to every one, because we are not to give it to Dogs and Swine, (that is, to uncleane persons) without a necessary cause, but to every one that asketh us, so that our profession or answer may probably at least turn to the glory of God, as it is in the text, *to sanctifie God.*

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, 1 seriously to study our religion, to understand the grounds thereof. 2 Freely and ingeniously to declare and defend it upon a good occasion.

Doct. 9. *Our profession of religion should be with meekenesse in respect of men, and with feare in respect of God.*

Reason. Because by meekenesse we do good amongst men, and the feare of God will stirre us up to do our duty, and keep us within the bounds and limits thereof.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those, which keepe no measure in their words and actions.

Doct. 10. *A good conscience is very necessary as well in the sanctification of Gods name, as in the profession of his religion.*

That is, a conscience bearing us witnesse, both of the grace of God towards us in Christ, and of the sincere desire and endeavour of our hearts to please God in all things.

Reason 1. Because without such a conscience, our faith, confidence, fortitude, and liberty, doth languish and decay.

2. Because such a conscience freeth us from all that burthen, wherewith otherwise we should be oppressed, and terrified, and affrighted from doing our duty.

3. Because it stirreth us up to all the duties of piety; for without the care of performing them, a good conscience can afford us no comfort.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us to have a care of our conscience, to keepe it pure before God and men.

The 17 verse is all one with the 20 verse of the 2 chapter.

Verse 17. *For it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well-doing, then for evill-doing.*

Verse 18. *For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickned by the Spirit.*

Verse 19. *By which also he went, and preached unto the Spirits in prison.*

Verse 20. *Which sometimes were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the Arke was a preparing; wherein few (that is, eight) soules were saved by water.*

Verse 21. *The like figure whereunto, even baptisme, doth also now save us, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God) by the resurrection of Iesus Christ.*

Verse 22. *Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, Angels, and authorities, and powers, being made subject unto him.*

The

The Analysis.

IN this part of the chapter, the Apostle urgeth that exhortation which he had before proposed concerning an endeavour to do well, even unto those that wrong us. And this he doth perswade them unto, 1, by a comparison which he makes betwixt those which suffer for evill doing: which comparison although it may seeme to be of a greater or lesser good, when it is said, *It is better to suffer for well doing*, yet it is indeed a dissimilitude, which is intimated by this μείωσιν extenuation, as appeares by the 19 and 20 verse of the second chapter. For it is thank-worthy and it will turne to our glory, if we suffer for well-doing; not so, if it be for evill doing. 2. He confirmes this by the example of Christ, verse 18. who though he did most justly, yet suffered unjustly; which example he shewes to be of great force, by the end of his suffering; because therefore he suffered, that he might bring us the same way unto God: which that he doth now effectually doe, he shewes by the cause thereof, to wit, life and glory, which he assumed unto himselfe by his divine Spirit after his suffering. And to shew that that effect, namely, the bringing of men unto God, doth proceed from this cause, to wit, the Spirit of Christ, the Apostle makes a comparison of the like, betwixt those things which the Spirit of Christ did heretofore in the dayes of *Noah*, and those things which he doth now since the comming of Christ in the flesh. Heretofore he preached the way of salvation, and patiently waited for the performance of obedience, upon the disobedient he inflicted condigne punishment, and a few that were obedient he saved in the Arke: so now also he preacheth the way of salvation, he waits for obedience, and by Baptisme, as it were a figure like unto the old Arke, he saves those that are obedient and have a good conscience before God, and that by the glorious life and power which he hath in heaven since the time of his resurrection, verse 21, 22. All which things tend hereunto, that we should hold fast a good conscience, even when we are evill intreated; because it is better as he said before, verse 17. and hath now shewed as well by the example of Christ, as by

his effectuall dispensation throughout all ages, as it is, vers. 18, 19. of which we may see more, if we look back to chap. 2. ver. 21. to the end. All the other things almost are explained in the answer to *Bellarmine*, about Christs descending into hell.

The Doctrines arising here-hence:

Doct. 1. *It was the Spirit of Christ, which preached heretofore from the beginning of the world by the Prophets and men of God, before that he appeared in the flesh.*

This is gathered from verse 19.

Reason 1. Because the person of Christ was the same from everlasting in the unity of the Divine Essence, so that whatsoever the Spirit of God did, that also may the Spirit of Christ be truly said to have done.

2. Because Christ was the Mediator of mankinde from the beginning of the world, in vertue and force: therefore whatsoever the Spirit did, which belonged to the furtherance of the Churches safety, all that he did by vertue of Christs mediation, and that no lesse then since his comming in the flesh.

Use 1. This may serve to instruct us in the truth of Christs divine nature.

2. To comfort us and strengthen our faith, in that we have the same Teacher, which instructed the Church from the beginning of the world, and brought it to salvation; and consequently we imbrace the same religion, as touching the substance of it, that all the faithfull imbraced from the beginning of the world.

3. To admonish us, never to reject or make light account of those things which are preached unto us out of Gods word, because it is the Spirit of Christ, which preacheth unto us those things, like as he preached unto others from the beginning of the world.

Doct. 2. *They which do not obey the preaching of Christs Spirit, wilfully bring upon themselves everlasting damnation.*

This is gathered from verse 19 20.

Reason 1. Because in neglecting the preaching of the Gospell, they neglect and refuse the only meanes that can keepe them from damnation, and bring them unto salvation.

2. Because they doe greatly dishonour Christ and his Spirit.

Use.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, alwayes, when we come to the hearing of Gods word, to endeavour to have circumcised eares and hearts, ready and willing to yeeld all obedience thereunto.

Doct. 3. *God useth much patience and long-suffering towards the disobedient.*

This is gathered from verse 20.

Reason 1. Because by this meanes Gods clemency and mercy is manifested.

2. Because by this patience of God all are invited, and many are drawne unto the obedience of faith.

3. Because this patience makes those that are stubbornely disobedient altogether inexcusable, and so justifies God in his just judgements.

Use 1. This may serve to direct us, to give the glory of this patience unto God, when we see sinners to go unpunished for a time.

2. To admonish us not to abuse this patience of God, but to make it a meanes for the amendment of our lives, and our own salvation, *Rom.* 2. 4.

Doct. 4. *In the destruction of the disobedient, God hath a speciall eye over the faithfull, to save them from the destruction.*

This is gathered from verse 20.

Reason 1. Because he disposeth his judgements according to his certaine and perfect counsell, not rashly or confusedly, therefore he passeth over whom he pleaseth.

2. Because the punishments of sinne should not fall alike upon the godly and wicked, for then he would not be a just disposer of them.

3. Because it stands upon Gods glory to save those that flye unto him, as he promised them in his covenant.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us, in the time of publick calamities, wherein God revengeth the wickednesse of men.

Doct. 5. *God doth often times preserve those that are his, partly by the same meanes wherby he destroyeth others.*

For it is said that the Arke saved *Noah* and those seven souls in the waters and by the waters. The same water that drowned others, by lifting up the Arke on high, was the meanes of their preservation. So *Ieremy* was delivered by the *Babylonians*, by whom the Iewes were oppressed. *Reason*

Reason. Because God can use the same instrument to produce divers and contrary effects, and when he doth this, his glory is the more manifested; because thereby it appeares that the effect doth not depend upon the instrument, but upon God: nor doth this come to passe rashly, or by chance, but is ordered and directed by Gods certaine counsell.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, in the time of danger not to looke so much upon the meanes which God useth, as to depend upon God himselfe, who can turne any meanes unto the good of those that are his.

Doct. 6. *Baptisme is such a meanes of our spirituall salvation, as the water of the flood together with the Arke, was heretofore of the corporall safety of Noah and his family.*

This is gathered from verse 21. It is called the Antitype of that water, not because the water was the type of Baptisme, and Baptisme the exemplar of it, but because there is a typicall representative similitude betwixt these two waters. And the similitude consists herein, that as the water of the flood lifted up the Arke and saved *Noah* and his family in the destruction of the rest, so baptisme strengthning our faith, and lifting up our soules unto God reconciled in Christ, saves us in the mortification of our sinnes.

Reason. Because it is Gods institution.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, which make little esteeme of baptisme.

2. To direct us, to seeke this right and proper use of *Baptisme* together with it and by it, and to apply it unto our selves to our comfort.

Doct. 7. *The outward baptisme doth not save us of it selfe, but the inward.*

This is gathered from verse 21. *Not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience.*

Reason 1. Because outward baptisme is common to the hypocrites as well as to the faithfull.

2. Because it comes not unto the soule.

3. Because it hath no saving power in it selfe.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to put too much trust and confidence in the outward Sacraments, or to relye thereupon, that we are baptized and partake of the Lords Supper,

per, but alwayes to seeke the spirituall grace of the Sacraments.

Doct. 8. *A singular effect and signe of the inward baptisme and effectuall grace, is the answer of a good conscience toward God.*

For when the Apostle meant to oppose inward Baptisme unto outward, in steed of the inward he puts the answer of a good conscience, as the proper effect thereof, by which it may be perceived and knowne. Now by the answer of a good conscience is meant all that confidence which we have before God of his reconciliation, which chiefely appeares in our prayers, and in a pious confession of the faith, and a holy care of obedience.

Reas. 1. Because then are we properly said to be saved, at least according to our apprehension, when our consciences are freed from the guilt and bondage of sin.

2. Because the peace of a good conscience is part of our glorification.

3. Because such a conscience makes us to goe on constantly in the way of salvation.

Vse. This may serve *to direct us*, to make it our chiefest care to keepe a good conscience toward God.

Doct. 9. *Such a conscience and our salvation doth in a speciall manner depend upon Christs resurrection.*

Reas. 1. Because in the resurrection of Christ, Gods sentence was declared, absolving us in him from all sinne and death. *Rom.* 4. 25.

2. Because Christ being raised from the dead, did powerfully accomplish that, which he merited by his death. *Rom.* 8. 34.

3. Because our consciences are lifted upwards unto Christ sitting in heaven.

Vse. This may serve *to direct us*, to fix the eyes of our faith upon Christ, as he was raised from the dead.

Doct. 10. *Since the time of Christs resurrection, great is his glory and power in heaven.*

This is gathered from the last verse.

Reason. 1. Because the time of his humiliation and emptying of himselfe was finished before.

2 Be-

2. Because it was fit, that he which in singular obedience was mightily humbled, should afterwards be exalted unto great glory.

3. Because this glory and power is necessarily required, that Christ might finish all things, which belong to the salvation of the Church.

Vse. This may serve *to comfort us*, against all dangers and feares, seeing we have such a Saviour in heaven.

CHAP. IV.

Vers. 1. *For as much then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arme your selves likewise with the same mind: for that he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne:*

Verse. 2. *That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*

Verse 3. *For the time past of our life, may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousnesse, lusts, excesse of wine, revellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries.*

Verse 4. *Wherein they thinke it strange, that you run not with them to the same excesse of riot, speaking evill of you:*

Verse 5. *Who shall give account to him, that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.*

Verse 6. *For, for this cause was the Gospell preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the Spirit.*

The Analysis.

THe Apostle having set before us the example of Christ, in this place he concludes therehence, that which he proposed to be concluded *chap.* 3. v. 17. and before that v. 11. that is, that all Christians should eschew evill, & follow that which is good. And this conclusion he layes downe in such manner, that if a due

due proportion be observed betwixt Christ as our example, and Christians that are regenerated, and renewed according to his image, he shews it doth necessarily depend upon & flow from the example of Christ. He concludes with such a Syllogisme, as this:

All Christians should be armed with the same mind, concerning sinne and righteousnesse, as Christ himselfe was:

But Christ having suffered in the flesh ceased from sinne, and lived in the spirit unto God:

Therefore all Christians should be wholy bent, and endeavour all that they can to cease from sinne or the lusts of men, and live unto God, or the will of God.

Both the proposition & Assumption are in v. 1. The conclusion in v. 2. The conclusion is illustrated by a comparison made betwixt the time past, and that which is to come; or betwixt that kind of life, which men are wont to lead before their calling, and that, which they should lead after they are called.

For the time past he affirmes, that we lived according to the manner of the Gentiles in all the lusts of the flesh, v. 3. And for the time to come, he denies that we should follow those lusts, but that we should live unto the will of God. v. 2. and the beginning of the 3. *It may suffice us &c.* where he intimates a reason also, why we should now leave off such courses, namely; Because we have too much offended God already in the time past, and if we should abuse his mercy and patience any longer, we could expect nothing else but the revelation of his just anger and indignation, to our eternall confusion. The same conclusion and Comparison is farther illustrated by anticipation of an objection and difficulty, which might take off our desires and endeavours to change our lives, and live contrary to the fashion of others. And the objection is this; that it will seeme strange unto many; and for this very cause will they revile us, and speake evill of religion it selfe, verse 4. The answer is, that this is not our fault, but theirs; and they shall give an account for it unto God at the day of judgement, verse 5. Which judgement is set forth by a distribution of the object, and upon occasion of that distribution he makes a new argument to remove the fore-named difficulty out of our minds; namely, because the Gospell had the same end, and

the same effect amongst the faithfull that are now dead; to wit, that they being condemned by men, did patiently beare that condemnation, and lived according to God in the spirit, verse *6.*

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *We should all arme our selves with such meditations, as the contemplation of Christs death affoords us.*

This is gathered from v. 1.

Reas. 1. Because we are thereunto called, that we should be made conformable unto Christ.

2. Because Christs death, or Christ crucified is a briefe Epitome of all saving knowledge, 1 *Cor.* 2.2.

3. Because by such meditations we doe more and more put on Christ, and by his power are our minds strengthened and fore-armed, as with a compleat armour, against all kind of temptations, and in this respect is this phrase, *arme your selves*, used in the text.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to arme our mindes daily with godly and Christian meditations, that so we may not be exposed to the danger of temptations unarmed and naked; in the bearing of a blow, or suffering any violence, there is great difference betwixt a man that is armed, and one that is not armed.

2. To direct us, in our meditations chiefely to contemplate upon Christ, and those things which pertaine unto his death and resurrection.

Doct. 2. *He that hath true communion with Christ, hath ceased from sinne, and by meditation thereupon doth daily more and more cease from it.*

This is gathered from verse 1, at the end.

Reason 1. Because our communion with Christ is by the Spirit of Christ, which makes us conformable to his death and resurrection, *Rom.* 6. throughout the whole Chapter.

2. Because in our conversion unto Christ, there is alwayes included an aversion from sinne by serious repentance.

3. Because such meditations are the ordinary meanes whereby the worke of the Spirit is perfected, and our repentance renewed and furthered.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, that professe Christ in word, but in their deeds doe not cease from sinne.

2. To direct us, to presse such syllogismes and reasonings upon our consciences, *Rom.6.*

Doct. 3. *He that ceaseth from sinne, doth not live to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*

This is gathered from verse 2.

Reason 1. Because the lusts of sinfull men are in themselves sinnes, and leade unto sinne.

2. Because these lusts fight against the soule, and we in our conversion have bound our selves to fight against them.

3. Because the will of God is the only rule of our life, which is altogether contrary to the lusts of the flesh.

Vse. This may serve to direct us in the triall of our state and condition. For looke how our life is sincerely directed in respect of the lusts of men, and the will of God, so may we certainely judge our selves to be either in the state of sinne, or in the state of grace.

Doct. 4. *It seemes more then enough to the faithfull, that before their conversion they so long followed the lusts of the flesh, and fashions of the world.*

This is gathered from verse 3.

Reason 1. Because they are ashamed with a holy shame of those courses, *Rom.6.21.*

2. Because they receive no benefit by them, but repentance.

3. Because they see that it was Gods great mercy, that they were at length delivered from them, and from the death which they bring, in the same Chapter.

4. Because the rest of their time seemes but a little unto them, in respect of the duty which they have to do, in seeking and glorifying God.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, which deferre and put off the time of amending their lives, as if they had not yet sinned enough.

2. To admonish us, to redeeme the time, and spend it in advancing of Gods glory, and our own salvation.

Doct. 5. *Amongst all the vicious lusts and courses of the world, luxury is one of the chiefest, whereby men walke in lasciviousnesse, excesse of wine and banquetings.*

Reason 1. Because in these men do most of all pamper the flesh, and have no regard at all unto the soule.

2. Because by these the soule is drowned, as it were in the pleasures of the flesh, so that it cannot lift up it self unto God, and to divine things.

3. Because these make way for the devill, and all devilish sinnes; and thereupon abominable idolatry seemes to be joyned with them in the text, because by them many were brought to be present at idolatrious feasts, and so to honour the idols themselves, though in their consciences they made no reckoning of them.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to beware of these wicked courses.

Doct. 6. *It seemes very strange to the men of the world, that the godly should refuse to live after that manner, as they live.*

Reason 1. Because they think there is a kinde of happinesse in that kinde of life, which for any man to dislike, they cannot but wonder at it.

2. Because as long as they are carnall, they cannot rightly discerne those spirituall reasons, which make the faithfull to abhorre such conversation.

3. Because they measuring others by themselves, thinke that all men do greedily desire such kinde of pleasures.

Vse. This may serve to admonish the faithfull, 1. Not to thinke that they do live so, as their calling or profession doth require, unlesse they do so farre estrange themselves from the common courses of worldly men, that they make them to wonder at them. 2. Not to be troubled at such opinions of men, but to take their dislike, as a token of Gods good liking and approbation.

Doct. 7. *By this alienation of mindes, which ariseth from the difference of the conversation, betwixt the beleevers and the unbeleevers, the regenerate and the unregenerate, it oftentimes comes to passe, that the unregenerate speake evill of the truth of God.*

This is gathered from verse 5 at the end. For although some are so taken with the splendour of piety which shines forth in the godly, that they glorifie God, as it is chap. 2. ver. 12. and it becomes a meanes of winning them, as it is chap. 3.

verse

verse 1. or at least that they are ashamed, as it is chap. 3. v. 16. Yet there are others which take occasion thereby to blaspheme, chiefely, because the godly by abstaining from those lusts and courses, which they highly esteeme, seeme seriously to reprove them, as well in their deeds as their words.

Reason 1. Because all they that do evill hate the light.

2. Because such a separation in conversation of life is as it were a condemning of those from whom separation is made out of conscience and religion.

3. Because wicked men being blinded with anger and hatred, and judgeing of others by themselves, do imagine that this separation is usually made in hypocrisie, & simulation, not out of conscience and religion.

Vse. This may serve to comfort and strengthen our soules against the temptations and troubles which may arise unto us from such mens blasphemies.

Doct. 8. *God will require an account from men for all such blasphemies, either in this life, or at the last judgement.*

This is gathered from verse 5.

Reason 1. Because his Majestie is wronged more in these blasphemies, then in most of the other sinnes.

2. Because those sinnes are most hainous, and come neerest to the sinne against the Holy Ghost.

3. Because they directly tend to the hinderance of the kingdome of God, and the righteousnesse thereof.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to take heed of all those, that do any way partake in such a sinne.

2. To comfort us: because God revengeth such injuries, we should commit them unto him.

Doct. 9. *God keepes a just account of those things that are done to the faithfull, not only while they live, but also after their death.*

For in that sense is he said to be *ready to judge the quick and the dead*, where by the quick and the dead the faithfull are most properly understood, as appeares by verse 6.

Reason 1. Because God alwayes lives, and his word and covenant lives.

2. Because it stands upon Gods glory, to defend the cause also of his servants that are dead, and to revenge their injuries.

3. Because

3. Because oftentimes the iniquity of the wicked is not come to its full measure, before the death of Gods children whom they have vexed.

Vse 1. This may serve to comfort us, as well in life as in death.

2: To admonish us not to judge rashly of Gods wayes in his patience and long-suffering; but to compose our mindes to a patient waiting for the wished event.

Doct. 10. *The condition of the faithfull now living, and of those that lived heretofore in all ages, is wholly alike, as touching the substance of it.*

This is gathered from verse 6. compared with the verse fore-going.

Rea. Because God is the same, & faith is the same; & on the contrary side also, the devill and the world are like themselves.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, not to give way to too much complaining of the present age, as if there had never beene the like before; but couragiously to go forward in doing our duty, that we may do that in our times according to our ability, which other faithfull men did in their time; who as it is said of *David*, *Acts* 13. 36. after they had in their age served the will of God, fell on sleepe in the Lord.

Doct. 11. *The short compendium of our whole Christian life, is, so to receive the Gospell, that renouncing the flesh we should in that respect be judged according to men, and live according to God in the Spirit.*

This is gathered from verse 6.

Reason. Because therein consists all divinity.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, to make triall of our condition by this rule.

Verse

Verse 7. *But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.*

Verse 8. *And above all things have fervent charity among your selves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sinnes.*

Verse 9. *Use hospitality one to another, without grudging.*

Verse 10. *As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.*

Verse 11. *If any man speake,* let him speake *as the Oracles of God, if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever, and ever, Amen.*

The Analysis.

FRom the last discourse about the judgement of God, the Apostle takes occasion to presse his exhortation to the duties of piety, by that very argument. First therefore he layes downe that third argument for a ground, that the last judgement, the end of all things, is at hand; and thereupon concludes that we must seriously and diligently apply our selves to the duties of piety. And these duties he sets downe by an induction of the principall parts, 1 Prayer, with the adjuncts and helping causes thereof, to wit, temperance and sobriety, verse 7. 2. Mutuall charity, verse 8. which he sets forth, 1. By the singular care, wherewith we should labour for it above other vertues, in these words: *above all things*, and then by the degree, wherein we should have it, and exercise it in this word, *fervent:* of which exhortation he gives a reason also from the effect, *for charity covers a multitude of sinnes.* 3. To charity he joynes hospitality, verse 9. as it were a speciall act of charity, whereof he shewes the due manner how it should be used, that it should be *without grudging*, that is, voluntary, not by constraint. 4. A mutuall communication of all the gifts of God, verse 10. And the reason of this duty is taken partly from the nature of the gift in respect of the author

thor thereof, that it is the grace of God, and partly from that relation, which they that have received the gift, have unto such a grace, to wit, that they are not masters, but stewards of it. And of this communication he propounds two chiefe kinds, which he describes and perswades them unto, verse 11. The first is communication in speech, or in the word of God, the description and rule whereof is, that it should be conformable to the nature of Gods word. The second is communication in our abilities and wealth, the description and rule whereof is common to both, together with all the foregoing exhortations, taken from the end and benefit of them, *that God in all things may be glorified*; which glorification of God is set forth by a present declaration of it; *to whom be praise for ever and ever, Amen.*

The Doctrines drawne here-hence.

Doct. 1. *The end of all things is at hand.*

This is gathered from verse 7. Now this may be understood, 1. of the end of all men, that live together, because a generation of men soone passeth away, and so the end of all those is properly said to be at hand. 2. It may also by the same reason be understood of the finall condition of all those: because looke how every one dyes, so shall he continue for ever, either happy or wretched. 3. It may also in some sort be understood of the end of the world.

Reason 1. Because these are the last ages, after which there is no comming of Christ to be expected, but unto judgement, nor any change of worship, but upon the consummation of all things.

2. Because the Lord doth not delay the promise of his comming, but prepares all things for himselfe, and in their order shewes forth the judgements of that day which is approaching.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to think with the evill servant that the comming of the Lord is farre off, but certainly to look for it, and accordingly to prepare our selves for that day, *Matth.*24.44,46.

Doct. 2. *For the preparing of our selves aright against the comming of the Lord, it is chiefly required, that we should pray continually.*

This

This is gathered from verse 7.

Reason 1. Because in our prayers we do stirre up our faith, hope, and desire touching those good things, which the Lord will impart unto us at his comming.

2. Because by our prayers we do turne aside and remove those evils from our selves, which make his comming dreadfull unto sinners: for by flying unto Gods mercy, we do flye both from our sinnes, and from his wrath.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to be diligent in prayer.

Doct. 3. *Temperance and sobriety should be joyned with our prayers.*

This is also gathered from verse 7. It is the same which is said every where, *Watch and pray.*

Reason 1. Because the effectuall consideration thereof, that the end of all things is at hand, makes us to love this world the lesse, and so to use it, as not to abuse it, that is, soberly and temperately, 1 *Cor.*7.31.

2. Because these are the meanes whereby our prayers are helped and furthered; therefore it is said in the text, *Be sober and watch unto prayer.*

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to make conscience of doing our duty in prayer.

Doct. 4. *Above all things we should labour for brotherly love, that it may be sincere and fervent.*

This is gathered from verse 8. Not that charity towards men is more excellent then faith hope and love towards God, but because it is the chiefest of those things which belong unto men, and should be preferred before all those things, which might any way hinder it.

Reason 1. Because love is the summe of the whole law, and so containes in it all other duties.

2. Because charity covers a multitude of sinnes, as it is in the text: *amongst men themselves, that they stirre not up anger, hatred, and contention, Prov.*10.12.

2. Because charity also doth in some sort cover a multitude of our sinnes before God, to wit, that they procure not the revenge of his anger. For this it doth, as a signe and argument, whereby we are the more assured of the forgivenesse of our sins, because we forgive others their offences, *Mat.*6.15.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to labour for charity.

Doct. 5. *Hospitality is one of the principall acts of charity.*

This is gathered from verse 9. So *Rom.* 12.13. *Heb.* 13.2.

Reason 1. Because in hospitality we do not only communicate our goods unto our brethren, but our selves also by a familiar conversation.

2. Because it is more acceptable unto others to receive a little upon such an occasion, then in any other respect to receive much, because the seasonablenesse and courteousnesse makes that which is given to be the better accepted.

3. Because by this meanes friendship is more increased then by other bountifull expences.

Vse. This may serve to reprove the mercilesse mindes and conditions of men, for luxury and covetousnesse hath quite taken away all hospitality.

Doct. 6. *The duties of this kind should be performed without grudging.*

This is gathered from verse 9.

Reason 1. Because God loveth a ready and cheerefull giver, 2 *Cor.* 9.7.

2. Because grudging makes the benefit unacceptable to him that receives it.

3. Because grudging is as it were a repenting for doing the duty, and so makes it void and of no effect.

Vse. The use hereof is, that in doing good we should watch over our mindes, that they be rightly and fitly disposed.

Doct. 7. *It is an office of charity to minister unto others the gifts which we have received, of what kinds soever they be.*

This is gathered from verse 10.

Reason 1. Because the gifts of God do in their nature tend unto the glory of God in promoting the good of men.

2. Because to this end are all the gifts of God committed unto us, as stewards of the grace of God, as it is in the text.

3. Because this very thing doth the communion of Saints require, to the believing and exercising whereof are all Christians called.

Vse 1. This may serve to comfort us, in that there is no faithfull Christian, but hath some gift, whereby he may minister something unto others.

2. To

2. To exhort us, every one to use that gift which he hath, to the good of others.

Doct. 8. *In exercising those gifts, which belong to the preaching or declaration of Gods word, our chiefe care should be, so to carry our selves as becomes the word of God.*

This is gathered from verse 11 at the beginning.

Reason 1. Because every action rightly ordered should have a just proportion to its object.

2. Because so great is the dignity of Gods word, that without such a care it cannot be kept safe, without wronging of it.

3. Because all the power of our speech concerning Gods word is lost, if it take not its whole strength from the word it selfe.

Vse. This may serve to admonish, not only the Preachers, that they handle the word of God holily, faithfully, and gravely, but also all hearers, that they judge aright of the Sermon, and make distinction betwixt those Preachers, which speake as the Oracles of God, and others, which speake as a humane speech or oration; and that they themselves also, if upon occasion they should treat of the word of God in private, should doe it holily, gravely, and reverently, as it becomes the word of God to be handled.

Doct. 9. *He that with his wealth ministreth to the necessities of others, should do it according to the ability which he hath received of God.*

This is gathered from verse 11, that is, he must do it not by constraint, sparingly, and slowly, but with a ready and cheerefull affection, to his power, and beyond his power voluntarily, 2 *Cor.*8.3.

Reason 1. Because this communicating is as it were a sacrifice, wherewith God is well pleased, *Heb.*13.16.

2. Because from this sowing we may expect a great harvest, of Gods blessing, 2 *Cor.*9.6.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to performe such duties according to the fashion and custome of the world, as if their example were our rule, but according to the ability which God hath afforded us.

Doct. 10. *God is to be glorified in all things.*

As the Apostle, 1 *Cor.*10.31.

Reas. 1. Because the glory of God is the end of all things.

2. Because our actions are not religious, but so farre forth as they are directed to that end.

3. Because God will glorifie those which glorifie him.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, not to imagine that our duty in glorifying God is restrained to the publick worship, as many use to do, but to have a care of this duty in all things.

Doct. 11. *God is to be glorified by Iesus Christ.*

Reason 1. Because in the name, and by the power of Christ we do all the good that we do, *Col.* 3. 17.

2. Because we should represent that which we doe, before God by Christ.

3. Because we cannot glorifie God by any other meanes, but by following the example of Christ, and observing his doctrine.

Use. This may serve to direct us, that Christ should be all in all unto us.

Doct. 12. *We should be so disposed towards God in Christ, that we should never think of his glory without an elevation of the heart to confesse God, which we should cherish and increase.*

This is gathered from that doxologie, *to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever, Amen.* For the Apostle breakes forth into this declaration of Gods glory, being as it were forced thereunto by the meditation of that duty, which he had now propounded, to glorifie God.

Reason 1. Because thereby appeares our inward disposition to the performing of that duty.

2. Because it is the beginning of the deed.

3. Because God should raigne in our hearts, that we might not so much upon deliberation, as naturally, be stirred up, and moved towards him, to the declaration of all those things which may make for his glory.

Use. This may serve to reprove the common stupidity of men, who are nothing at all moved with those things, which do most neerely belong to the glory of Gods name.

Verse 12. *Beloved, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.*

Verse 13. *But rejoyce, in as much as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings, that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.*

Verse 14. *If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye, for the Spirit of glory, and of God, resteth upon you: on their part he is evill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.*

Verse 15. *But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thiefe, or as an evill doer, or as a busie-body, in other mens matters.*

Verse 16. *Yet if any man* suffer *as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalfe.*

Verse 17. *For the time is come that judgement must begin at the house of God: and if it first* begin *at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospell of God?*

Verse 18. *And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appeare?*

Verse 19. *Wherefore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their soules to him in well doing, as unto a faithfull Creator.*

The Analysis.

THe Apostle doth here repeate that exhortation, to suffer persecution aright, which he had heretofore used againe and againe; because this exhortation was very necessary, and containes in it the primary scope of the Epistle. But in this place he repeates it as a pre-occupation or anticipation of an objection or difficulty, which might be made against the foregoing exhortation, wherein he perswaded them to a constant care of all the duties of piety. For they to whom this Epistle was to come, might thus thinke with themselves, that by this profession and practise of piety most grievous persecutions are like to befall them, and that contrary to their expectation, and therefore they are not to be requested by walking in the same way to heape so great evils upon themselves. Of these persecutions

secutions therefore the Apostle warnes them. 1. In generall, that it should not seeme any new or strange thing to any Christian, thereby to be troubled at it, which he shewes, 1. From their proper end, that they are as it were fire to try the faith, sincerity and constancy of the faithfull, verse 12. 2. From the similitude that is betwixt the faithfull and Christ in suffering afflictions, in which respect they should be so farre from being troubled at it, that they should rejoyce, which is contrary to perturbation. The reason of which consequence is taken from the effect, to wit, because by suffering afflictions after this manner the faithfull come to partake of glory and eternall joy with Christ. 3. From the blessednesse which is adjoyned unto it, in respect of the communion of the holy Spirit, who when he is blasphemed by the persecutors, is present with those that suffer, and is glorified by them, verse 14. But that this which the Apostle hath spoken, may be rightly understood, he tels them, that this cannot be meant of every affliction, but of that alone which a man suffers for the name of Christ, verse 14. as it is explained, verse 15, 16. when a man suffers not for his owne deserts, but meerely as, or because he is a Christian: from which consideration the conclusion which he laid downe before is effectually deduced, verse 16. to wit, that in that respect he should not be ashamed, or so troubled, as if he were ashamed of the name of Christ, but therefore to glorifie God. 4. From the ruling cause which orders and governes such events, namely, the will of God, whereby he hath appointed a certaine time to exercise judgement in his house or Church, verse 17. at the beginning. For that which is there spoken of the time of judgement, is afterwards referred to the will of God, verse 19. 5. To the same purpose is the condition of the faithfull set forth by comparing the condition of the unbelievers, verse 17, 18. which is declared by such a connexion: If the condition of the faithfull be so hard, the condition of the unbelievers must be altogether intolerable; whence he doth closely intimate, that we must neither envie the unbelieving persecutors, or revolt from the faith by reason of persecutions. From all these things the primary conclusion is specially inferred, verse 19. that the faithfull in suffering afflictions should arme themselves

selves with true confidence, against all the perturbations and temptations which may arise unto them from afflictions.

The Doctrines drawne herehence.

Doct. 1. *Afflictions and persecutions should not seeme a new or strange thing unto Christians.*

This is gathered from verse 12.

Reason 1. Because they were foretold by Christ and his Apostles.

2. Because Christ himselfe and his chiefe Disciples were used after the same manner.

3. *Because* such is the disposition of the world, that we must alwayes expect such things from it.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us not to be troubled at these things, as it is in the text.

Doct. 2. *The end and use of afflictions is for the triall of Christians.*

This is gathered from the same verse. See the same doctrine Chap. 1. verse 7.

Doct. 3. *The faithfull in suffering afflictions and persecutions are partakers of Christs sufferings.*

This is gathered from verse 13.

Reason 1. *Because* when they suffer for the name of Christ, Christ suffers in them, according to that of the Lord, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?*

2. *Because* they are made conformable unto Christs death, *Phil.* 3. 10.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us, because therein we have matter of rejoycing, as it is in the text.

Doct. 4. *From these afflictions, if we suffer them joyfully, we have a sure argument of our eternall joy and glory to come hereafter.*

This is gathered from verse 13.

Reason 1. Because they that are partakers of Christs death, are partakers also of his resurrection and everlasting life, *Rom.* 8. 17. 2 *Cor.* 4. 11.

2. *Because* that joy which we have in afflictions, is the first fruits of our eternall joy and glory.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us to learne to suffer joyfully for the name of Christ, *Iames* 1. 2. *Acts* 5. 41.

Doct.

Doct. 5. *The reproaches which the faithfull suffer for godlinesse sake, are to be reckoned amongst those persecutions, which they suffer for the name of Christ.*

This is gathered from verse 14.

Reason 1. Because they tend to the dishonouring and disgracing of us.

2. Because they shew that the mindes of the authors of them are as ready to bring greater evils upon us, if occasion should serve.

3. Because reproaches doe worke more upon some mens minds then reall injuries.

Vse. This may serve to admonish, 1 all men, to take heed that they have no communion with the wicked world in scoffing at any part of true piety. 2. The godly, to have a speciall care, that they be not moved at such reproaches, but to beare them with the same patience, that they ought to beare other persecutions.

Doct. 6. *In these reproaches which the godly suffer for the name of Christ, the Spirit of God is in a speciall manner blasphemed on the one side, and glorified on the other.*

This is gathered from verse 14.

Reason. Because looke how farre forth the faithfull make profession of true piety, so farre forth are they the temples of the holy Ghost: therefore when in that respect they are reproached, the holy Ghost is evill spoken of: and when they hold fast and adorn their profession notwithstanding these reproaches, the same Spirit which is evill spoken of by the reproachers, is glorified by them.

Vse 1. This may serve for terror to those that do reproach others.

And 2. For comfort to those that are reproached.

Those things which are in the 13 verse, were handled before cap. 2. & 3.

Doct. 7. *God hath certaine and appointed times to execute his judgements.*

This is gathered from verse 17 at the beginning.

Reason 1. Because the patience and long-suffering of God must have their time.

2. Because there is a time also required, that men may fill up the measure of their sinnes.

3. Because

3. Because there are certaine opportunities of time, wherein Gods judgements are executed with greater benefit, then they could be at other times.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to condemne God any way either of slowneſſe or rashneſſe in respect of his judgements, but to rest well satisfied in his most wise ordering of all things.

Doct. 8. *Judgement doth often begin at the house of God, that is, at the Church.*

This is gathered from the same place.

Reason 1. Because the sinnes of those, which professe Gods name, do in a speciall manner wrong Gods name and his honour, and therefore the more they offend God, the more ought they to be punished.

2. Because Gods chiefe care is, to purifie his Church by such chastisements.

3. Because God oftentimes useth the unbelievers as his instruments to correct his Church; they must therefore be first tolerated, that they may accomplish Gods counsell, and afterwards punished, because they have done so wickedly.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, not to be troubled in minde, when we see the Church afflicted before and above other people, but to acknowledge Gods divine ordering of it.

Doct. 9 *The judgement which God exerciseth upon his Church, is a most certaine argument of the most severe and heavie judgement that shall in its due time come upon wicked men and unbeleevers.*

This is gathered from verse 17,18. So *Ier.*25.29.

Reason 1. Because God deales with his Church as a Father, but he will deale with others as a Judge.

2. Towards the Church in the midst of judgement he remembers mercy, but towards the wicked and unbeleevers he exerciseth revenge.

3. Because to the beleevers judgement worketh together for good, but in the unbelievers it hath no such mitigation.

Vse 1. This may be for comfort to the faithfull in their afflictions.

2. For terrour to the unbeleevers in their persecutions and carnall security.

Doct. 10. *They that suffer for the name of Christ, do properly suffer according to the will of God.*

This is gathered from verse 19. compared with ver. 14 16.

Reason 1. Because their sinnes oftentimes are not the causes of these afflictions, but the will of God to make triall of them.

2. Because it is the revealed will of God, that such afflictions are the lot of the faithfull, and the way by which they usually come to the kingdome of God.

3. Because this suffering of such afflictions is part of our obedience to the revealed will of God.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us against the trouble of these afflictions.

Doct. 11. *They which suffer in this manner, may commend their soules unto God.*

This is gathered from the same verse.

Reason 1. Because when they suffer for the name of God, God doth in some sort suffer with them, and therefore their cause is Gods cause.

2. Because in that duty which we performe unto God, as his servants, we may expect protection from him, as our Master.

3. Because while we are exposed unto danger for Gods sake, God cannot but take care of us.

Vse. This is a use of consolation, and it is explained and set forth by the Apostle *Paul*, 2 *Tim.* 1, 12.

Doct. 12. *They should do this by well doing.*

This is gathered from the same verse. So *Rom.* 1.

Reason 1. Because they cannot suffer for the name of Christ but as they suffer for well doing.

2. Because they cannot preserve the liberty of their conscience, but by a good conscience, that is, by well doing.

3. Because to commend an evill cause unto God, is, to make God as it were the Patron of evill.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to take heed, that we doe not deprive our selves of this great priviledge by evill doing.

Doct. 13. *God is a faithfull protector and defender of those that commend their soules unto him.*

Reason 1.

Reason 1. Because it is easie for him to preserve our soules, as it was heretofore to make them: and in this respect he is called in the text, *God the Creator* not *the Preserver.*

2. Because it stands upon his glory to do this.

3. Because the fidelity and truth of his promises requires as much.

This may serve to comfort us in all straits and adversities: *Let them commend their soules under a faithfull Creator,* saith the Apostle.

Chapter V.

Verse 1. *The Elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.*

Verse 2. *Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready minde.*

Verse 3. *Neither as being Lords over Gods heritage: but being ensamples to the flock:*

Verse 4. *And when the chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receive a crowne of glory that fadeth not away.*

The Analysis.

HEre is a speciall exhortation propounded towards the Elders, that they should performe their duty and office in a holy manner. The duty in generall is set downe to be, to feed the flock, whereof they were made overseers, by a diligent oversight and care of them, verse 2. at the beginning. And withall it is described by 3 conditions that are in a speciall manner required therein, which are set forth by a dehortation from the three contrary vices, that are opposed to those three conditions. 1. The first condition is, willingly to feed the flock; the contrary vice whereunto is, to do it by constraint. 2. To do it readily and freely: the contrary vice unto this, is, to seeke after filthy lucre thereby. 3. Not only in doctrine, but in

example of life to go before the Church; the contrary vice whereunto is, to Lord it over the Church. This duty being thus declared and described, they are perswaded unto it by the reward that is adjoyned, which for that cause all faithfull shepherds do receive, verse 4. at the end. Which reward is set forth both by the internall nature of it, that it is a crowne of glory that fadeth not away; and by the authour and giver of it, to wit, that the chiefe Shepherd our Lord Jesus Christ, will give it; and also by the time of this giving of it, when the chiefe Shepherd shall appeare, that is, at the last day of judgement. Now this exhortation, that it might be the more effectuall, and might worke the more upon them, is urged and set forth by the person of *Peter*, who was the ministring cause thereof, 1. From the parity and fellowship of the same duty, as *Peter* an Elder prayed the other Elders to do their duty. 2. From the knowledge which he had and the testimony which he could give of the afflictions of Christ, which he suffered for the Church, the remembrance whereof should stir up all shepherds to a diligent care of the Church. 3. From that certaine expectation which he had of the glory to come, which glory he promiseth to all shepherds in the name of the chiefe shepherd.

The Doctrines drawne herehence.

Doct. 1. *Those exhortations are most effectuall which are propounded in an humble manner.*

This is gathered from verse 1. where the Apostle prayes, not commands, in humility and charity. So *Phil.* 1. 9. 1 *Tim.* 5. 1 He prayes the Elders also as a fellow Elder, although he was placed in a higher degree, as Apostle.

Reason 1. Because by this manner of doing it appeares, that he which exhorts doth not aime at his owne good, but the good of another.

2. Because by this manner of doing his zeale shewes it selfe to be the purer.

3. Because he, to whom such an exhortation is made, is honoured thereby, and so takes it the easier and better.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, in all our exhortations and admonitions to have respect unto this.

Doct. 2. *It makes the exhortation the more effectuall, when*

when a man speakes out of certaine judgement and communion of affection.

This is gathered herehence, that *Peter* makes way for his exhortation, in that he was a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and so had a certaine knowledge of those things which belong unto Christ, and that he was partaker of the same glory; and therefore he was affected after the same manner himself, as he desired they should be.

Reason 1. Because knowledge gives ability and authority, and communion of affection addes zeale and charity to the exhortation.

2. Because these two will take away those objections, which usually hinder the efficacy of the exhortation; namely, either that he gives his judgement of things that he doth not know, or else at least he is an unexperienced man, of whom it may rightly be said, *If thou wert here, thou wouldst thinke otherwise.*

Use. This may serve to direct us to get knowledge of those things which we exhort others unto, and affections also answerable thereunto.

Doct. 3. *Men should be exhorted in a speciall manner unto those duties, which belong unto their proper or particular functions or callings.*

This is gathered from verse 2. where the shepherds are exhorted to feed the flock.

Reason 1. Because every mans particular function is that condition wherein God hath placed him to advance his glory.

2. Because a mans faithfulnesse is most of all made triall of in that condition.

3. Because the duties of our generall calling should be exercised in every Christians particular condition.

Use. This may serve to admonish every one to take greatest care of those duties which are proper to his calling or condition.

Doct. 4. *It is the proper duty of a Shepherd, to feed the flock that is committed to his charge.*

This is gathered from verse 2.

Reason 1. Because the shepherds are appointed for the edification

fication of the Church: now to feed is nothing else, but to use all meanes that are appointed by God to procure the edification of the Church.

2. Because Pastors are properly given to the faithfull that are converted, who as new borne babes should be nourished and brought up with milke and food, untill they come to perfection.

3. Because the overseers of the Church should take most care of those things, that are most necessary for the Church; but it is most necessary for the faithfull being imperfect, to have their spirituall life preserved and increased by feeding.

Vse. This may serve to admonish, 1 The Ministers not to thinke that it is a light or common duty that lies upon them, but that the very life of the Church doth in some sort depend upon their labour and Ministery, and therefore so to carry themselves, as befits and becomes so great a duty.

2. The people, not to expect from their Ministers vain and light things which might tickle their eares, but to come to a Sermon as to the Lords Table, and seeke for spirituall food to feed their soules unto everlasting life.

Doct. 5. *Pastors should performe their duties willingly, not by constraint.*

This is gathered from the same verse. Now by constraint is meant that forcing which proceeds from outward things, whereby a man performes the part of a Minister in some sort, either to avoid poverty, or disgrace and infamy, or the censure of others.

Reason 1. Because that which is done by constraint, comes not from the heart as from an inward principle, nor from the Spirit sanctifying; and therefore it is not a duty pleasing and acceptable unto God.

2. Because that which comes not from the heart, and is not done willingly, is done only perfunctorily and for fashion sake, not with that diligence and care which God requires.

3. Because that which proceeds not from the heart and the deerest affection of the soule, doth not usually worke upon other mens mindes, and therefore is not effectuall to the edification of the Church, which is the end of the Ministery.

Vse. This should admonish us, to look not only to the understanding

derstanding, but also to the disposition of the will and heart in the Ministers of the Church.

Doct. 6. *They should do the same of a ready minde, not for lucre.*

Now by *lucre* is meant all kinde of worldly profit, which men acquire unto themselves, either in doing the thing, or in getting fame, or in gaining friends, and the like.

Reason 1. Because that which depends upon lucre or some such like end, must necessarily be applyed thereunto, and this is to corrupt the word of God, 2 *Cor.* 2. 17.

2. Because that which depends upon mutable things, that also it selfe is mutable and inconstant.

3. Because he which seeketh after lucre, is not a Minister of God, but of Mammon.

Use. This may serve to admonish, 1. The Ministers, not to follow after lucre. 2. The people not to suffer their Ministers to be tempted by poverty, and so to be the lesse cheerefull and ready in performing their duty, *Heb.* 13. 17.

Doct. 7. *The affectation of Lordlinesse should be far from Christs Ministers.*

This is gathered from verse 3.

Reason 1. Because they are called to meere service, not to Lordlinesse.

2. Because Christ himselfe, whose Ministers they are, did purposely live amongst men as one that serveth, that he might leave an example unto those that should minister unto others in his name, *Luke* 22. 27.

3. Because the worke wherein they are imployed, is not subject to the command and authority of men. For men cannot command religion, but only perswade unto it.

4. Because the Lordlinesse of Ministers alienates mens mindes from their testimony, because they neither willingly subject themselves to such as affect Lordlinesse, and they suppose too that those men, whom they see to study their owne glory and power, do neither look after the glory of God, nor the good of the Church.

Use. This may serve to admonish all Ministers, to take heed not only of all affectation, but also all shew of Lordlinesse. Now these men have a shew of Lordlinesse, 1 That would

have

have others in some sort to depend upon their authority. 2. Those that prescribe something as necessary to be believed or done, which is not taken out of Gods word. 3. Those that expound the will of God it selfe too imperiously, having no regard to the infirmity of those with whom they have to doe.

Doct. 8. *Ministers should go before the people not only in doctrine, but in example also.*

This is gathered from verse 3.

Reason 1. Because they are called to feed the flock with all their strength; and therefore they should edifie the Church not only by their words, but by their deeds also.

2. Because a wicked life doth either utterly destroy their preaching, or at least much weaken it.

3. Because a good example is of a singular force, in that it sheweth that that very thing may be done, which he preacheth should be done.

4. Because it takes away all prejudice out of mens minds, and all suspicion of affecting Lordlinesse and vaine glory, when they see Ministers seriously to do that, which they propound and perswade others to do.

Vse. This may serve to exhort, first, the Ministers, to labour to leade an exemplary life. Secondly, the people, to imitate the good life of their Ministers, for therefore are they proposed as examples. The common vices contrary to this duty, are: 1. That many observe those things only in their Ministers, which they may carpe at or calumniate, and not those things which they should take notice of, with intention to imitate them. 2. That many imagine that there is a speciall kinde of holinesse belonging to Ministers, which others are not bound to labour for. 3. That many excuse their wicked courses by this pretence, that they are Lay-men, not Ecclesiasticall or Clergy-men.

Doct. 9. *Ministers should expect the just reward of their labour and care, not from men, but from Christ.*

This is gathered from verse 4.

Reason 1. Because Christ is the chiefe shepherd, and Lord of the flock, as it is in the text.

2. Because they must expect many injuries from men, and those good things which doe happen, are not such, or so highly

highly to be esteemed of, as that they should depend upon them.

3. Because they will labour to please him most, from whom they expect their reward. Now they should please Christ, not men.

Vse. This may serve to comfort godly Ministers against those troubles, which they finde men to make against them.

Doct. 10. *Their reward is a crowne of eternall glory.*

Reason 1. Because glory is the reward of the faithfull for all kinde of obedience towards God: Now in the Ministery there is a speciall kinde of obedience.

2. Because those that did strive or runne lawfully in a race, there was wont to be a Crowne set before them; so for those that carry themselves well in the exercise of the Ministery, besides the glory common to all the Saints, there is a speciall kinde of addition prepared, which is like as it were a crown.

Vse. This may serve to exhort Ministers, couragiously to contemne all temporary ignominy and disgrace for this Crowne of eternall glory.

Doct. 11. *This Crowne of glory shall be fully given at Christs second comming to judgement.*

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, patiently to persevere unto the end.

Verse 5. *Likewise ye younger, submit your selves unto the elder: yea, all* of you *be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.*

Verse 6. *Humble your selves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.*

Verse 7. *Casting all your care upon him, for he careth for you.*

The Analysis.

THe Apostle having in the former verses described the duty of the Elders towards the Church or the younger sort, and perswaded them unto it, he doth there-hence conclude the duty of the younger towards the elders by a comparing of

things that are alike unto it, as the first word of the 5 verse shewes unto us, *Likewise*. This duty is in generall pointed out by subjection, which is set forth by the other duty, that is due not only to the Elders, but also to all the members of the Church, by reason of that nature which it hath common with the former; and it is also called subjection in those words, *yea, all* of you *be subject one to another*. Now this subjection as well unto the Elders as unto all, is first described what kinde of subjection it ought to be, to wit, not only outward, but proceeding from the inward subjection of the soule unto God, *be clothed with humility*. And that it is meant of humility towards God may be gathered from verse 6. Secondly, He doth perswade them also unto this humility: 1. Because it is an ornament of the minde; that by the way. 2. From Gods blessing adjoyned, which followes thereupon, *God gives grace unto the humble*, which is illustrated by Gods curse contrary thereunto, that fals upon the proud, *God resisteth the proud*. Thirdly, he doth urge and presse them unto this subjection towards God, verse 6. *Humble your selves therefore*; and he shewes the proper reason of this subjection, which is the mighty hand or omnipotency of God: and withall hee explaines that reason, which he had before propounded concerning the blessing and grace of God towards the humble, to wit, that by that grace they shall be exalted: the time of which exaltation is marked out, that it shall be in due time, *that hee may exalt you in due time*. In the last place by anticipation of a close, but weighty objection, whereby this subjection is usually made very difficult, he shewes the true manner thereof, to wit, that it should be joyned with that confidence, which casts all care upon God, so that no feare or worldly care can hinder this subjection, which confidence he doth perswade them unto by that effectuall providence which God hath over the faithfull for their good, verse 7, at the end, *For he careth for you*.

The doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *There is the like duty of the people towards their Pastors, as there is of the Pastors towards the people.*

This is gathered from verse 5 at the beginning. *Likewise ye younger*. Now by the younger in this place is chiefely meant

the

the flock, which depends upon the Pastors, because the Pastors and Presbyters were for the most part chosen of those that were elder in age, and therefore the greatest part of the flock consisted of youngers. Now their duty is said to be like, not for that it is in the same kinde, that the people should guide their Pastors, as the Pastors do gu de the people, but because there is the like reason of both their duties.

Reason 1. Because the same God and Lord both of Pastors & people, hath imposed and prescribed to both their duties.

2. Because that relation which is betwixt the Pastor and people, requires a mutuall intercourse of duty.

3. Because the Pastors labour and care is made void, if the people do not in some sort answer the same.

4. Because the Pastors care and labour, tending to the salvation of the people, deserves it.

Use. This may serve to reprove those that are very curious and rigid in exacting their Pastors duty, when in the meane time they are nothing carefull of their own dutie.

Doct. 2. *The duty of people towards their Pastors consists chiefly in subjection.*

Reason 1. Because their Pastors are set over them in Gods name.

2. Because faithfull Pastors propound nothing else to themselves to observe, but the will of God, whereunto subjection and obedience must necessarily be yeelded.

3. Because in the calling of their Pastors, they did either expresly or covertly at least promise this very thing.

Use. This may serve to reprove those that come unto Sermons, as Judges, to play the Criticks, not to subject themselves to the will of God, and such as cast off all discipline as an intollerable yoke.

Doct. 3. *There is a kind of subjection also due unto all Christians.*

This is gathered from these words, *Be yee all subject one to another.*

Reason 1. Because as occasion shall serve, we should humble our selves to performe the meanest offices unto our brethren.

2. Because we should submit our selves unto the private admonitions of our brethren.

3. *Because* we should with all patience beare all the infirmities of our brethren.

Vse. This may serve to reprove the arrogancy and pride of men, which cannot endure any such subjection.

Doct. 4. *Humility is a great ornament.*

Reason 1. *Because* humility is a singular vertue, and in some sort the foundation of all the rest.

2. Because it makes us acceptable unto godly men, to whom in this regard we are made more profitable.

3. Because it doth greatly commend us in the sight of *God*, when for his sake we are subject not only to our superiours and equals, but also to those of the lowest degree.

Vse. This may serve to refute all those, that seeke for honour and reputation by arrogancy; and shunne humility as it were a vile debasing of a mans selfe.

Doct. 5. *God resisteth the proud.*

Reason 1. *Because* the proud resist the will of God.

2. *Because* they seeke unfitting things, or at least not after a due manner.

3. Because whatsoever proceeds from pride, turnes to the dishonour of God, to whom all subjection is due.

Vse. This may serve to condemne proud men.

Doct. 6. *God giveth grace to the humble.*

Reason 1. Because the promise of grace was made to humility.

2. *Because* humility is the disposing and fitting of a man for to receive grace.

3. Because only the humble men have a worthy esteeme of Gods grace.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, greatly to labour for humility.

Doct. 7. *The strength and power of God should stirre us up to subjection towards him.*

This is gathered from verse 6 at the beginning.

Reason 1. *Because* it were madnesse to resist the Almighty.

2. Because Gods omnipotencie is the protection of those that humble themselves before him.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to suffer our selves so much as in thought to be led away from our obedience towards

wards God, but from the meditation of Gods omnipotency and our own infirmity to increase daily more and more in humility.

Doct. 8. *God will exalt the humble in due time.*

This is gathered from verse 6 at the end.

Reason 1. Because glory is the reward of obedience.

2. Because they glorifie God, and therefore God will exalt them according to his promise, *Those that honour me, I will honour.*

Vse. This may serve to direct us, to seek for true exaltation by humilitie and submission.

Doct. 9. *They that humble themselves before God, may safely, and also should cast all their care upon God.*

This is gathered from verse 7.

Reason 1. Because this is Gods covenant, that he will be alwayes all-sufficient unto them that walke before him.

2. Because God by a singular care and providence watcheth over those that have a care of his glory, & seek his kingdome, as it is in the text, *He careth for you.*

Vse. This may serve to comfort all the godly, because God hath freed them from all care; and they should imbrace this libertie by true faith, and putting their trust in him, and apply it to themselves.

Verse 8. *Be sober, be vigilant: because your adversary the Devill, as a roaring Lion walketh about, seeking whom he may devoure:*

Verse 9. *Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.*

Verse 10. *But the God of all grace, who hath called us into his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.*

Verse 11. *To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*

The

The Analysis.

FOr conclusion of the whole Epistle, to the foregoing exhortations there is added one generall one, which doth most neerely belong to the scope of the Apostle, to wit, that notwithstanding all oppositon, difficulty, and temptation, they should constantly persist and go forward in that grace, which they had received. Now this care is described, 1 by two duties, which belong to the due manner thereof, soberness, and vigilancy. 2. The necessity of these duties is shewed by the grievous danger, to which otherwise they should be exposed. And this danger is set forth by the efficient cause thereof, the Devill, of whom the Apostle makes a description to that purpose: 1 *By* the opposition and enmity which he hath against us; in respect whereof he is called, *our adversary or enemy.* 2. *By* the manner and degree of that enmitie, that it is joyned with cruelty, *as of a roaring Lion.* 3. That besides this cruelty there is over and above in him very great diligence and greedinesse to do us hurt, in these words: *seeking whom he may devoure.* Now the Apostle gives us warning, that we must not yeeld to this enemy and danger which he threatens us, but resist it, verse 9 at the beginning, which is nothing else, but not to suffer our selves to be removed by his temptations from the grace of God: and the chiefe meanes of this resistance he shewes to consist in the stedfastnesse of our faith: which faith may in this respect be wonderfully confirmed by the example of our brethren in the world, who have experience of the like afflictions and temptations of Sathan. Agreeable to this exhortation he addes a prayer verse 10. Because the successe of all our endeavours depends upon the grace and blessing of God: And in this prayer he beseecheth God to strengthen the faithfull, and make them perfect in all grace, at the end of the verse, *make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.* The arguments whereby he confirmes their faith that they shall obtaine this petition, are two: 1. The all-sufficiencie of the grace of God in it selfe, in which respect this title is given unto God, that he is the God of all grace. 2. The communicating of this grace in the calling of the

faithfull

faithfull, in these words: *who hath called you:* the grace of which calling is shewed, first, by the end and scope, that it is, to partake of the eternall glorie of God. Secondly, by the principall cause, *in Christ Iesus.* Thirdly, by the condition that goes before the accomplishment of this calling, and properly belongs to this exhortation of the Apostle unto constancie in afflictions, to wit, because we are so called unto eternall glorie, that in the meane time we must suffer afflictions, *after that ye have suffered a while.* In the last place upon occasion of this prayer he addes a religious doxologie, glorifying God, verse 11. wherein is contained both the last end of that petition, and a confirmation of the same that it shall be heard; as also an indirect exhortation to the faithfull, to bend all their care thereunto, to glorifie Gods name really and effectually, by persisting in the grace of God.

The Doctrines arising here-hence.

Doct. 1. *We had need to watch continually. Be vigilant.*

Reason 1. Because sinne and danger doth naturally steale upon us, if we do not resist it.

2. Because we cannot do our duty without diligent care and labour, and therein consists the manner of watching.

3. Because if we could avoid danger, & obtain our desires, if we did not seeke it with care and diligence, it would be no praise to us, nor peace of conscience.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, to imitate watchmen, which watch and ward to keepe the Citie; the like diligence should we use in keeping our soules, to examine all that goes in and out, our thoughts affections, words, and actions, together with the occasions of them, what they are, whence they came, and whither they tend.

Doct. 2. *That we may watch as we ought to do, it is required that we should be sober.*

Now by soberness is meant the moderation of our affections touching all worldly things.

Reason 1. Because the cares of this world do so burthen the soule, that they leave no place for spirituall cares.

2. Because the care of the world doth draw and distract the minde, so that although it doth not altogether exclude religion, yet it doth diminish and weaken it.

3. Because

3. Because under the shew of some worldly profit, pleasure, or honour, we do oftentimes admit of those things, which betray and destroy our soules.

Use. This may serve to admonish us not to drown our selves in the things of this world, but so to use the world, as if we used it not, 1 *Cor.* 7. 31.

Doct. 3. *We have such a spirituall enemy, that we had need to watch and ward continually against him.*

Reason 1. Because he is full of spirituall malice and craft.

2. Because his diligence is answerable to his malice.

3. Because he is most cruell, seeking not to bring some small inconvenience upon us, but our utter destruction.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, never to be secure, but day and night to be mindfull of that danger wherein we are.

Doct. 4. *We must courageously resist the Devill.*

This is gathered from verse 9.

Reason 1. Because he is such an enemy, that we can make no peace or league with him.

2. Because they which yeeld unto the devill give themselves up into his hands, as being overcome.

3. Because the courage of our minde to resist is a great part of spirituall victory.

Use. This may serve to exhort us, to strengthen our mindes in all things to make this resistence.

Doct. 5. *The chiefe power of resisting, consists in a stedfast faith.*

This is gathered from these words, *Whom resist stedfast in the faith.*

Reason 1. Because faith layes hold upon Christ who overcame the devill, and in him they lay hold of victory it selfe.

2. Because faith laies hold of the truth of all the promises, whereby the soule is invincibly fortified.

3. Because faith, seeing it is the foundation of all grace, if it be stirred up and strengthened, it confirmes and strengthens also all the other vertues.

Use. This may serve to direct us, to have a speciall care to raise and build up our faith.

Doct. 6. *The examples of other beleevers doe make much for the confirmation of our faith in afflictions & other temptations.*

Reason

Reason 1. Because thereby it appeares that such conflicts are not contrarie to faith and pietie.

2. Because therehence we have a cloud of witnesses, to shew, that at length we shall obtaine the victorie by faith.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, to stablish our mindes more and more by such meditations.

Doct. 7. *All those things which we desire, either for our selves or for others unto salvation, we must aske of God.*

This is gathered from verse 10, compared with the foregoing verse. For all those things which the Apostle had before required of the faithfull, he doth now at the end of the Epistle in their name crave of God, and he askes it with discretion, as appeares by that particle, *But* as if he should have said, Although all these things which I have proposed unto you by way of admonition, exhortation, and consolation, are duties which you ought necessarily to do, yet it is not to be expected, that you shold accomplish it by your own strength: I do therefore call upon God, (which you likewise should alwayes do) that he would increase his grace more and more in you, whereby you may receive both to will and to do all these things.

Reason 1. Because of our selves we can doe nothing that is good.

2. Because in such like purposes and endeavours we are letted and hindred by divers temptations, and such as are most strong through our infirmitie.

3. Because all our spirituall life proceeds from God, and of him should we aske it.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to rest in good purposes and intentions, but alwayes to seeke for grace from God, to accomplish the same happily.

2. To direct us, when we reade, heare, and meditate upon Gods word, to water it, as it were, with our prayers, that it may be fruitfull.

Note. By such conclusions of the Apostles, wherein they do close up their Doctrine with prayer, the Ministers especially are warned and admonished, after their Sermons to desire God to give both themselves and the people grace to

obserue those things, which they have learned in the Sermon: and others also are admonished diligently and earnestly to seek the same, both in publick with the Minister, and in private by themselves.

Doct. 8. *We stand in need of manifold grace.*

As it is set forth by divers words in the text: *Make perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle*, which may be thus distinguished, that *to make perfect* is to adde those degrees of grace, which are yet wanting: *to stablish*, is to protect and defend from temptations and dangers: *to strengthen* is to give inward power and strength: and *to settle*, is to fasten the root it selfe of grace more and more.

Reason 1. Because all those good things which we have, we have but in part.

2. Because we are assaulted by continuall temptations, and are over and above prone to revolt.

3. Because great and manifold is that perfection, whereunto we are called.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to rest in the beginnings, but by much prayer to aske much grace of God.

Doct. 9. *God is the fountaine and author of all grace.*

For this title is given unto God in this place, because it is most agreeable to the petition for manifold grace. For Holy Men in their prayers lay hold of that in God, and propose those titles of God unto themselves, which make most for the furtherance of those prayers which they make.

Reason 1. Because God hath in himselfe infinite riches of grace.

2 Because grace is not given but by grace, and not for any merit of our own.

3. Because every degree and all kinde of grace is revealed and exhibited unto us by God in the Gospell.

Vse 1. This may serve to direct us to build up our selves in this beliefe of Gods grace.

2. To admonish us, not so to rest in that grace which we have received, as if there were nothing farther to be looked after

after, because God is God not of this or that particular grace, but of all grace.

Doct. 10. *The chiefe effect of this grace, which is in us, is our calling.*

Reason 1. Because before our calling we lye in sinne and spirituall death.

2. Because by our calling we come to the hope of eternall glory; *who hath called you into his eternall glory*, as it is in the text.

3. Because in our calling wee are ingrafted into Jesus Christ, that by him we are brought unto this glory, *who hath called you unto eternall glory in Iesus Christ*, as it is in the text.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to labour to make our effectuall calling more and more sure.

2. To exhort us, to give God all the thankes for this calling, and to leade a life answerable thereunto, which seemes to be aimed at in the text, *viz.* that for this eternall glory whereunto we are called, we should contemne all worldly things, whether good or evill.

Doct. 11. *The sufferings of this life are not repugnant to the comfort of this glory.*

Reason 1. Because we suffer but a while: for although the time of affliction may seeme long, yet it is but short, if it be compared either with eternall death, which the wicked shall suffer, and we have deserved; or with eternall glory whereunto we are called.

2. Because these afflictions are the way, whereby according to Gods wil we come unto glory.

3. Because glory it selfe appeares the more glorious for the afflictions going before.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us against all the sufferings of this life.

Doct. 12. For this grace of God we should give all glory unto God.

This is gathered from verse 11.

Reason 1. Because therein consists our thankfulnesse.

2. *B*ecause therein also consists the perfection of the work of grace.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to give place to luke-warmenesse, but to make such high reckoning of the saving grace of God, that upon every mentioning thereof our mindes should be stirred up sincerely to glorifie the name of God, and alwayes endeavour so to do.

The end of the first Epistle.

A BRIEFE ANALYSIS of the Second Epistle Generall of Saint PETER.

CHAP. I.

Verse 1. *Simon Peter, a Servant, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousnesse of God, and of our Saviour Iesus Christ.*

Verse 2. *Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.*

The Analysis.

SUch kinde of writings, as well Ethnick or prophane, as sacred, are usually divided into three parts, whereof the first is, the Superscription, Salutation, and Preface. 2. The Epistle it selfe. 3. The Subscription or Conclusion. But more accurately me thinks, we may say, that the preface and conclusion are only adjuncts of the Epistle, which depend upon the Epistle it selfe, and are also usefull thereunto. But in this Epistle only one of these adjuncts is used, namely, the Preface. For there is no subscription made, or any such conclusion, as is used in the Epistles of *Paul*, and in the first of *Peter*. The Preface is contained in foure verses, and it consists of two parts, a salutation, and a confirmation of the salutation: that in the two first, this in the

the third and fourth verse. In the salutation there are those three things expressed, which are in every action; namely, the agent, the action it selfe, and the object of it. For so is there the person saluting, the persons saluted, and the salutation it selfe. The person saluting is described, first, by his name adjoyned. Secondly, by his office adjoyned, and that both generall, that he is a servant of Jesus Christ, and speciall, that he is an Apostle of his. The persons saluted are described by a speciall adjunct, which is in stead of the forme, namely, by faith: which faith is set forth, first, by a comparison of the like, that it is like precious with the faith of the Apostles. 2. By the principall efficient cause, God and Jesus Christ. 3. By the meanes thereof, *viz.* righteousnesse. The confirmation of the salutation containes, 1. the good that is wished, which consists of two parts, *Grace*, and *peace*. 2. The degree and quality of this good, *be multiplyed*. 3. The helping cause of this multiplication of good, which is *the knowledge of God and Iesus Christ*.

This is the Analysis.

As for the person, he hath a double respect. For he is here considered as the Author of the Epistle, and also as the Author of the Salutation: in the former respect we have these Doctrines.

Doct. 1. *The very names of Christs famous Disciples, were heretofore of great force for the confirmation and advancement of the truth in the Church.*

For to that end did the Apostles usually set downe their names in the Epistles, which they wrote unto the Churches.

Vse. This may bee for exhortation, that we also according to our abilities should labour so farre with those amongst whom we live, that our names may be like precious ointment, and may make something for the edification of others.

2. It may serve to reprove those, which so carry themselves, that they are a disgrace to godlinesse, and to the Church.

In the latter respect the person yeelds us this observation.

Doct. 2. *The salutation of the Apostles and Ministers of God is more highly to be prized.*

Reason. Because it is not only a good and godly prayer, as are the salutations of all the faithfull, but it is also a ministeriall

all application of the good things which God communicates unto us by them. For it proceeds not only from a pious affection, but from their singular office and duty.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to neglect or contemne such blessings, whether they be publick or private.

Doct. 3. *It is an honourable title, if a man be rightly and deservedly called a servant of God or Christ.*

Reason. Because the chiefest men in the Church of God alwayes gloried in this title; not only the Apostles and Prophets, but also Kings and Princes, as we see in *David*.

Vse. This may serve to comfort poore Christians that have no titles whereof to boast. For if they be the servants of God and Christ, they have no cause to envie others, or to complain of their owne condition. Now that it may be knowne who are the servants of God, we must know that there are two things, as it were essentiall to a servant, 1. To depend upon his Masters will and pleasure, for direction in his worke. 2. To referre all that he hath to the use and profit of his Master, not to his owne. So also every faithfull servant of God, 1 depends wholly upon God for the direction of his life, not upon himselfe and his owne counsell, nor upon the examples and customes of the world, much lesse upon the suggestions of the flesh and the devill. 2. He referres himselfe and all that he hath to advance and set forth the glory of God.

Doct. 4. *Those servants of Christ which are called Apostles, have the chiefest authority in the Church of God.*

For that is the reason why *Peter* saith that he is an Apostle of Jesus Christ. All the faithfull are Christs servants, but they are not Apostles: even the ordinary Ministers themselves, although in a large sense they may be called Apostles and Embassadours of Christ, yet not in that sense as *Peter*, *Paul*, and the like are called. For the word *Apostle*, in this and the like places, signifies not only an Embassage, but a singular priviledge or prerogative in that embassage. Now the priviledge of the Apostles above other Ministers consists in these foure things: First, In the manner of the embassage, *viz.* that they were called neither of men, nor by men but immediately of Christ. Secondly, in the office imposed upon them by vertue of this embassage, *viz.* that they were chiefly sent to plant Churches,

Churches, to feed and build them up. Thirdly, in the object whereabout their labour should be imployed, *viz.* that they were sent not to any one Church, but to divers, and for the conversion of the whole world. Fourthly, in their gifts and assistance of the Spirit, which alwayes accompanied this their embassage, *viz.* because in executing this their office, as well in preaching as in writing, they were freed from all errour. As in the Creation of the world God first made light, and afterwards set some lights in the Firmament of Heaven to give light upon the Earth: So also in the re-creation and restitution of the world, God first gave light in Christ himselfe, who was the Sonne of Righteousnesse, as he is called in Scripture, and afterwards ordained the Apostles, as great lights, to bring this light upon the Earth. And this is it which our Saviour saith unto them: *Ye are the light of the world.*

Vse 1. This may serve to exhort us, to give God thanks, that he hath not left us in darknesse, to wander at uncertainties, but hath set up these shining lights for us, by whose meanes we might be directed unto heaven.

2. To admonish us, to observe also and believe those things which they have prescribed us. For we must receive the writings of the Apostles after the same manner, as we should receive Christ himselfe, if he were with us on earth.

3. To refute the Pope, who brags that he is an Apostle, and hath Apostolicall authority, (whereupon also he cals his seat at *Rome*, Apostolicall,) when as he hath not so much as one of those conditions, which are necessarily required to make an Apostle.

Hitherto of the person saluting. It followes now to speak of the persons saluted, where we have these Doctrines.

Doct. 1. *The Apostles wrote not properly to the unbelievers, but to the Church.*

For so here and elsewhere are they described to whom the Epistles are sent.

Reason. Because the preaching of the Gospell, not the writing, is the effectuall meanes of conversion. The writing and reading do more properly serve for the confirmation and edification of those that are converted, then for the first conversion.

Vse.

Vse. This may serve to exhort, first of all, that they will principally apply themselves unto Sermons. Secondly, those that have received some benefit by Sermons, that they would also diligently apply themselves to the reading of the Scripture, that they might more and more confirme and edifie themselves.

Doct. 2. *Faith is the proper marke of difference, whereby the Church is distinguished from all other societies.*

For therefore are the Christians here described by faith, that they may be distinguished from all other men: and the same which in other Epistles are wont to be called the elect, the called, the Churches of God, those which are in God the Father, and in Jesus Christ, are in this place barely called the faithfull.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, if we will make our calling and the condition of our salvation sure, then to labour especially to obtaine faith, and also to increase it more and more.

Doct. 3. *The faith of Christians is a most precious profession.*

Therefore it is here called *precious faith*; and in the former Epistle, Chap. 1. v. 7. *faith* is said to be *more precious then gold that perisheth.*

Vse 1. This may serve to exhort us, to make more account of faith then of all worldly things, according to that of Christ: *What shall it profit a man to gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule, or faith?*

2. To comfort poore Christians which have no possessions in this world. For if they have true faith, they have that which is more excellent then silver and gold.

Doct. 4. *The faith of common Christians is as precious as was the faith of the Apostles.*

Which is not to be understood of the degree or quantity, but of the nature or quality.

Reason. Because the faith of all Christians layes hold of the same good, *viz.* Christ and his benefits. Hereupon *Paul* cals it common faith: for as one that is sick of the Palsie, that taketh some precious thing with a shaking hand, doth possesse it as well as the other, that is strong; so the faithfull, though

they be weake, if they do truly lay hold of Christ; have him to be their Saviour as well as they that are most strong.

Use. This may serve to comfort weake Christians; for if they have true faith, though it be but like a graine of Mustard seed, they have the same comfort that the Apostles themselves had. If they be truly knit unto Christ, though it be but with a slender thred as it were, yet they hold Christ as well as they that are tyed unto him with the strongest cords: which yet is not so to be taken, as if we were not to seeke for a stronger and surer faith; for although the weake possesse the same good that the strong do, yet they have not the same fruit and benefit of this possession.

Doct. 5. *The cause of this precious faith is not in any man, but in the righteousnesse of God and Christ.*

Now by righteousnesse is not meant any recompence of desert; but the faithfulnesse and truth of the promises, which depend upon the meere goodnesse of God. And these promises made unto *Abraham* himselfe, that his seed should be as the starres of heaven, and the sand of the Sea, out of all nations; and they were afterwards often repeated by the Prophets.

Use 1. This may serve *to refute* those, that ascribe it unto mans free will; so that first they make the calling of the faithfull to be uncertaine, as if the promises of God could be made void; and then they take away the glory it selfe of mans conversion from God, and give it unto man.

2. *To exhort* us, to give God thankes, for this so incomparable a good.

The Doctrines that arise from v. 2.

Doct. 1. *All spirituall good things, are contained in these two words, Grace and peace.*

For by *Grace* is meant both the free favour of God, and also the application and manifestation thereof in the hearts of the faithfull, by the operation of the holy Ghost, in the word and Sacraments. And by *peace* is meant quietnesse of mind, which is the fruit of grace. So that *Grace* is the first benefit, and *Peace* the last. And therefore all benefits that passe betweene are included therein, as in two extreames. Hereupon in all the Epistles almost the Apostles prayer and salutation

is

is contained in these two : To *Timothy* and *Titus*, he addes *mercy* also, *Grace, mercy and peace.* But that is only an application of the same thing, which is signified by grace, and for a peculiar reason is added in those Epistles, because *Timothy* and *Titus* wanted a speciall kind of grace, in respect of the service, which they did undergoe in the Churches, in regard of their age, and those divers temptations, whereunto they were obnoxious in that Service. In the old Testament peace onely was usually wished in their salutations, without any mention of Grace ; but yet grace also at that time was understood : But in the time of the new Testament, which is the time of grace, and wherein all things are more fully delivered, it was most fitting, that grace should be named in such like salutations.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort and direct us*, above all things to wish grace and Christian peace unto all those, to whom we are well-wishers.

Doct. 11. *The desires of the faithfull are chiefly for those spirituall good things, Grace and peace.*

Reason. The Reason of the Collection is this, because the Apostle in this beginning of the Epistle, labours to get the good will of those to whom he writes, by shewing the prayer that he had made for them : Now he could not effect this, if his prayer were not according to their desire; for if he should have wished any of those things, that they cared not for, such a wish would have done no good with them.

Vse. This may serve *to exhort us* all, to examine our selves according to this rule. For if wee make no reckoning at all, of the meanes and instruments of grace, but doe reject or despise those, that labour most to procure this grace and peace for us, we have cause to feare, that we are yet farre from the nature, and disposition of true beleevers.

Doct. 3. *They which have gone fartheſt in faith and grace, have yet need of grace.*

This is gathered therehence, that the Apostle wisheth grace unto those, that have obtained like pretious faith, with the Apostles themselves.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to refute* the Papists of their merits.

2. *To exhort us* to humility, and continuall prayer for the grace of God.

Doct. 4. *Without Grace, there is no true peace.*

Grace is the cause and foundation of peace, peace the effect and fruit of grace; it is the inheritance, which Christ left unto his disciples alone, *John* 14. 27. *Isay* 48. *last*. For this peace is not an externall and worldly peace, but spirituall and internall. Before we are partakers of grace, we are called in Scripture, *Gods enemies*, so that we doe wage a kind of warre against God himselfe, and therefore also against the Angels of God, and other of his creatures. Now by grace, and by it alone is peace made.

Vse. This may serve *to refute and reprove* the folly of those men, which so please themselves, in that outward quietnesse which they enjoy, when in the meane time, they are utterly void and ignorant of the grace of God.

Doct. 5. *We must seeke not only for grace and peace, but also for great abundance of it.*

This is gathered from that word, *Grace and peace be multiplyed*. For the good things of that grace are such, that they cannot be too much: in this there is no sinning in excesse. Hence it is that the Apostle *Paul* alwayes exhorts the faithfull, and prayes also that the faithfull may abound more and more in all grace. And to the *Ephesians* he proposeth the breadth, and length, and depth, and height of this grace, that they may be rooted and grounded in it, Chap. 3. verse 18.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute and condemne those, that so rest in the present grace which they have, or seeme to have, that they looke for no more. Such do those men seeme to be, that thinke they know enough, beleeve enough, love enough, &c. And therefore they neglect both the publick and the private meanes, whereby they might be farther edified. The state of a Christian in this life is a state of building, not perfection: therefore as he would shew himselfe to be a foolish builder, that should rest in the middle of his worke, and not make up the perfect structure, so also in a Christian life.

2. To exhort us to stirre up our selves, and labour for more abundant grace and peace.

Argument 1. The first argument may be taken from the nature of grace and peace, which is such, that he that hath once tasted the sweetnesse thereof, cannot but desire a fuller

draught

draught of it, 1 *Pet.*2.2 3. *Desire the sincere milke, &c.*

Argument 2. From the imperfect degree, that we have yet attained : We are for the most part, as new borne babes, as the Apostle speakes in the same place.

Argument 3. From the will of God, to whom nothing is more acceptable, then that we should seeke for plenty of his grace, *Isay* 55.2. *Prov.*9.

Argument 4. From the sinne or guilt, which followes the neglect of that duty. For as amongst men, if one should set before us most precious wares, and should commend them, and also offer them freely unto us, he could not but take it ill, if we should refuse them: so much more may we think that Gods anger is incensed towards those, that neglect and despise the riches of this grace, that he hath set before them and commended unto them.

Doct. 6. *God is the only author of grace and peace.*

This is gathered from 1 *Peter* 5.10.

God is called the author of all grace. Hence by a kinde of appropriation he is called *the God of grace*, as in another place he is called *the Father of mercies, and God of all consolations*; and grace also in this signification is called the grace of God; so also of peace we finde in Scriptures, that God is called *the God of peace*, and true peace is every where called *the peace of God.*

Vse 1. This may serve to refute all the Papists, that manifest the contrary both in their words and practise. For they are wont to call the blessed Virgin *the Mother of grace* : so also they runne unto her and to other Saints, as if they were the authors of grace and peace.

2. To instruct and confirme us in this truth, that the bestowing of grace and peace depends upon the meere good will and pleasure of God. For when God is called *the God of grace*, it is meant also that he is *the Lord of grace*, who can according to his good pleasure give it to whom he will, and deny it to whom he will. This is gathered from 1 *Thess.* 5. 23. and 2 *Thess.*3.16. for he that in the former place is called *the God of peace*, in the latter is called *the Lord of peace.* Therefore when we see that grace & peace is granted unto some, & denied unto others, we should rest satisfied in the good will of God, according to the example of Christ, *Matth.*10. For by so doing we give glory to God, as is evident. 3. To

3. To exhort us, to pray unto this great God to give us grace and peace.

Doct. 7. *Jesus Christ is the beginning of all grace and peace.*

God is the first and principall author, and so also Christ, as he is God: but as he is God and man, our Mediatour, so he is the beginning ordained by God, as the head, from whom all grace is to be derived unto his members, as into the vessels of grace; so that God is as it were the first and principall fountaine, Christ as the secondary fountaine, in whom is hid all grace that is to be given unto the faithfull, and the faithfull themselves are the vessels that draw and receive this grace, which runnes into them from these fountaines, and the word and Sacraments are as the channels.

Vse. This may serve to informe us of the manner, how we should seeke for grace, *viz.* that we should alwayes go unto God in Christ, because *extra Christum*, out of Christ, he is unto sinners not a God of grace and peace, but of vengeance, and a consuming fire.

Doct. 8. *True faith is the instrumeneall cause of grace and peace, and of the multiplying of both, whereby it is derived unto us.*

Reason. Because by knowledge in this place is meant faith. For it is not meant a bare knowledge, but something more, which followes this knowledge, therefore it is not called γνῶσις, but ἐπίγνωσις, that is, an acknowledging. 2. Thereby is meant an effectuall knowledge, such as there is no other taught us in the Scriptures, but faith. Now faith is signified by the name of knowledge, because by the hearing and knowledge of the word it is usually begotten in us. And faith is called the instrument of grace, not as it is in God himselfe, willing, intending, and ordaining spirituall good things unto us, for so grace is the cause of faith; but as the sense, fruit and knowledge of this grace is communicated unto us. For faith is so the fruit and effect of grace, that it hath the first place, and is the instrumentall cause of all following grace. And this efficacy it hath in respect of the object, which it layes hold of, *Iesus Christ*, because as we said before, he is the beginning of all grace, so that as *Adam* was the beginning of nature and the corruption thereof, and that relation which we have unto

Adam

Adam by naturall generation, makes us partakers both of his nature and corruption: so Christ was made the beginning of life spirituall, and grace, and that relation of faith which we have unto Christ in our regeneration, makes us partakers both of the life and grace which is in Christ.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, 1. To have a speciall care of our faith, if we would not be destitute of all the grace and peace of God. This is it which the Apostle saith elsewhere, *above all, take the shield of faith*, that is, above all things get faith, *Ephes.*6.16. This is it which is often pressed, *By faith we are saved, by faith we stand, by faith we obtaine the victory*, &c. 2. To labour also for the increase of faith, if we desire the increase of grace and peace. For grace is multiplyed by the multiplying of faith, and the knowledge of God. As in a house, which is inlightned by the Sunne, the more the windowes stand open, the more it is filled with light: so also in us, the more our faith is increased, the more is grace and peace increased in us. Let that therefore be our daily prayer, which was Christs Disciples, *Lord increase our faith.*

Verse 3. *According as his Divine power hath given unto us all things that pertaine unto life and godlinesse, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and vertue.*

The Analysis.

THe scope of the Apostle in this verse is to confirme the faith of Christians, touching the multiplying of grace and peace through the knowledge of God, which he had wished unto them in the former verse. And the argument is taken from the comparing of things alike, as that particle, *According as*, intimates unto us. The things compared are. 1. The giving of peace and grace; and 2. The consequent multiplying of them. And of these he shewes that there is the same reason, both in respect of the principall cause, and the lesse principall or instrumentall cause; so that the whole argument runs after this manner; *If God and our Lord Iesus Christ will give unto us grace and peace through the knowledge of him, then will he*

he also multiply unto us the same gifts by the same: But the former is true: Therefore the latter. The Assumption is contained in verse 3. And it is not barely set downe, but with an illustration, although he addes some things to confirme the reason it selfe and our faith. For in stead of *grace and peace* the Apostle here puts things necessary unto *life and godlinesse*; and in the second place *glory and vertue*: like as by *life and glory* he meanes the same thing, that he did before by *peace*, though in a different respect: so also by *godlinesse and vertue* he means the same thing that he did before by *grace*. The principall cause of this gifting he explains by the power which he hath, which he cals *divine*; the instrumentall he explaines by the object thereof, namely, Christ. For he argues from a singular effect, which doth most of all pertaine to the thing it selfe, namely to our calling, *glory and vertue*.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Life and glory are contained in Christian peace.*

For the condition, that Christians are made partakers of by peace, is called *life* in respect of that inward and permanent principle of the most perfect operations, wherein consists mans felicity, which is given unto all the faithfull. And it is called *glory* in respect of the compleat happinesse, which flowes from that principle, and shall in its due time also appeare with outward splendour.

Use 1. This may serve to informe and instruct us, not to think meanely or contemptibly of the condition of faithfull Christians, but to judge aright according to the nature of the thing, *viz.* that the only life and chiefest glory is proper to them.

2. To exhort us, to preserve faith, grace, and Christian peace before all worldly things, yea, before this present life it selfe, and the glory thereof, because by our faith we shall obtaine a farre more perfect life and glory, according to that of Christ, *He that loseth his life, shall finde and obtaine a farre better life.*

Doct. 2. *Christian grace brings with it godlinesse and vertue.*

For the same thing is called grace, which is the effect of Gods favour; it is called *godlinesse*, as it hath God for its ob-

ject

ject: and it is called *vertue*, as it perfects a man in operation.

Use 1. This may serve to instruct us, not to boast of the grace of God, unlesse we shew it by our godlinesse and vertue.

2. To reprove and condemne those, that either out of presumption or feined simulation, do either separate grace from godlinesse, or grace from vertue, or vertue from either.

Doct. 3. *All things necessary unto life and godlinesse are given by God unto the faithfull.*

Now to make a gift perfect 3 things are required. 1. That the gift which is given be made the receivers, or his to whom it is said to be given; for otherwise it is not a gift, or a thing actually given, but potentially only. 2. That it be made his absolutely or irrevocably, not conditionally, that the gift it selfe should depend upon a condition. 3. That the giver be moved for no other cause to give, but to shew and exercise his bounty and liberality. the more perfectly and purely these conditions are found in any gift, the more perfect and pure is the gift. Now all these do most exactly agree to those gifts of God, which pertaine unto life and godlinesse. As for example, Christ is said to be given for us, and also given unto us: the holy Ghost hath that name as it were appropriated unto him, that he is the gift of God: faith and repentance are expresly called the gift of God.

Use 1. This may serve to instruct us, against the error of those, that will not take such like good things as a gift, but teach us that we must seeke for them by our own merits; for as the Apostle saith, *If of grace, then not by workes, for otherwise grace were not grace:* so may we also say; if of gift, then not by workes, for otherwise the gift would be no gift.

2. To admonish us, throughout our whole life to seeke for such good things after that manner as is agreeable to their nature, that is, to ask, pray, and supplicate for them, &c. And in the second place to use all our endeavour to shew our selves thankfull unto God for such divine gifts.

4. *Hee gives these spirituall gifts unto us by his Divine Power:*

His Divine Power hath given unto us all things, as it is in the text: the like hereunto is that in the first Epistle, c. 1. v. 5.

Ye are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation. And Christ tels us, *Matth.* 19. 26. *With men this is unpossible, but with God all things are possible:* where we are expresly taught, that salvation and spirituall good things are given unto us by the power of God, to whom all things are possible, that is, his omnipotency, *Ier.* 31. 35. *Thus saith the Lord, which giveth the Sunne, &c.*

Reason. Because such a power is necessarily required to bring this to passe, by reason of those strong impediments, which withstand and crosse this worke. For so Christ telsus, that the Devill *as a strong man holds his palace, till a stronger then he comes upon him and overcomes him, and takes from him all his armour wherein he trusted, Luke* 11. 21, 22. This is also fully explained by the Apostle, *Ephes.* 4. 8. *When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.* Where he shewes that gifts are given unto us by that very power, whereby captivity is led captive. It is expresly said *Ephes.* 1. 19. *that it is the exceeding greatnesse of Gods power, which worketh in us by the might of his power,* and Verse 20. *the same power whereby Christ was raised from the dead.*

Use 1. This may serve to refute the Remonstrants and such like men, that deny faith to be begotten in us, and our conversion to be wrought by Gods almighty power. For they make grace only morally perswading, that may be resisted, impotent, and consequently uneffectuall.

2. To comfort the weake and all the faithfull, in that they have no reason too much to feare the gates of hell, because they have the gates of heaven making with them: although they must wrestle not only against flesh and blood, but against principalities and the powers of the world, &c. *Ephes.* 6. 12. Yet they have a divine power, farre beyond all those enemies, to uphold them in this wrestling.

3. To exhort us, 1. To behave our selves stoutly, and shew our selves men in the cause of God, answerable to so Divine a Power, as he is ready to afford unto us. 2. To give God thankes, that hath not left us in our owne infirmities to be exposed as a prey unto our enemies, but by his divine power helpes our infirmities.

Doct. 5. *This Divine Power is the power of Christ himselfe.* *Use*

Vse 1. This may serve to confirme our faith, touching Christs divine nature. For the divine power is not separated from the divine nature.

2. To comfort us, that he who so loved us, that he gave himselfe for us, hath such sufficient strength to perfect our salvation. He useth this argument to comfort his Disciples. *Iohn* 10.28,29.30.

Doct. 6. *Christ gives us these things by his divine power, when he doth effectually call us, through the knowledge of him that calleth us.*

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to apply our selves with feare and reverence unto the meanes of our calling, because Christs divine power is shewed therein.

Doct. 7. *The consideration of the end whereunto we are called in Christ, should build us up in faith, hope, and all those things which pertaine unto life and godlinesse.*

Therefore the Apostle here puts us in minde, that he hath called us to glory and vertue; so in the former Epistle, c. 5. v. 10. *who hath called us unto his eternall glory, &c.* To that purpose the Apostle *Ephes.* 1.18. earnestly prayes for the *Ephesians*, that *the eyes of their understanding may be enlightned, to know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches, &c.* Now this consideration is of great force for these reasons.

Reason 1. Because it is an argument confirming our faith, whilest we thus thinke with our selves: If God hath called us unto glory, then there is no doubt, but that he will in due time bring us unto glory, and in the meane time keepe us in the way that leadeth thereunto.

2. Because it is an argument whereby we are stirred up to labour for vertue, whilest we thus thinke with our selves: if we are called unto glory and vertue, we must not carry our selves sordidly and basely, defiling our selves with the pollutions of the flesh, like Swine wallowing in the mire, but as it becomes such a calling.

Doct. 8. *There is the same reason of this calling and the first gift of grace, that there is of the multiplying of all grace and peace.*

For they are alike free, they do depend alike upon the di-

vine power, they are alwayes knit and linked together: this followes from the connexion of verse 3. with the second.

Vse. This may serve to comfort us, as it is set forth, *Phil.* 1. 6. *That he which hath begun a good worke in us, will performe it untill the day of Christ.*

Verse 4. *Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*

The Analysis.

THe Apostle had before confirmed his prayer and the hope of the faithfull, touching the multiplying of grace and peace, by the comparing of things alike, that is, from the giving of all things which are necessary unto life & godlinesse. Now he confirmes and proves the assumption also, touching the giving of things necessary to life and godlinesse. And the argument is taken from the testimony of God, that is, from Gods promises: for his promise is a testimony of the good that he will bestow. Now while the Apostle disputes from the promises to the gifts promised, he disputes from the testimony to the things testified, which kinde of argumentation he doth sufficiently intimate, when he puts the things promised in stead of the promise. And the things promised are thus explained; 1. In generall, by two adjuncts, that they are *exceeding great and precious*, that is, neither concerning small things, or things of little moment, nor concerning things that we have nothing to do with, or are little to be esteemed by us, but things of exceeding great weight, and of exceeding great price. 2. In speciall, by those effects, which are contained in these things promised; and they are two. First, A lifting up of the faithfull to perfection, which is explained by a likenesse unto the divine nature. Secondly, A freeing of them from corruption, which is set forth by the subject and the cause thereof. The subject is the world, the cause is lust or concupiscence.

The

The Doctrine arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Gods promises carry in them the vertue of a gift.*

Reason. Because they make the thing promised certainly to belong unto those, to whom it is promised. For although it be not yet actually in their possession, yet it is that power that is certainly produced into act. The cause is, 1. The truth of God that promiseth. 2. The Divine Power which accompanieth Gods promises, wherof mention was made in the former verse.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute those that make Gods promises wholly to depend upon mans will.

2. To comfort all the faithfull, that they may be of good courage, and have a firme hope in the good things that are promised by God.

Doct. 2. *Gods promises are of things exceeding great.*

Hence it is that the Scripture often speakes of the wondrous things of Gods word, *Psal.* 119.18. And it evidently appears by the things themselves, if they are well weighed and considered; whether we look unto the divine properties which breake forth in the things promised, or their divine effects. For wonderfull is the mercy, and power, and providence whereupon they depend; and the effects also are wonderfull, for many of them are such, that they do so transcend mans capacity, that they seeme unto many utterly unpossible and incredible: as the resurrection, immortality, and life everlasting.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne the stupidity of those, that are nothing moved or taken with these things that are so great and wonderfull.

2. To exhort us, to labour and strive in our prayers with *David*, that our eyes may be more and more opened, to be able to see the wonderfull nature of them.

Doct. 3. *Gods promises are as precious unto us, as they are great in themselves.*

So they are distinguished: for if God had promised that he would make another World, yet so, as that it should nothing pertaine unto us, this indeed had been an exceeding great promise, but nothing precious unto us; but when he so promised a world to come, wherein immortality and

great

great glory shall dwell, as that we should possesse it, this promise is as precious as it is great. Hence it is, that in the Scriptures the testimonies of God are extolled, whose promises are exceeding great above all riches, *Psal.*119. 14. Above gold and silver, and all precious things, as we often read in the *Psalmes* and *Proverbs*.

Vse 1. This may serve *to exhort* us, both in judgement, affection and all our endeavours, to carry our selves answerable to these divine promises, as to the most precious thing that is, as we are admonished, *Prov.*2. 4. *To seeke them as silver, and search for them as for hid treasures. And Prov.* 8. 10. *to receive them, and not silver, &c.* And to be more delighted with these then with the sweetest gifts, to get these promises at any price, how great soever, though we sell all that we have, as it is in the parable of the Merchant, who found a precious Jewell.

2. *To comfort* those Christians that are poore in spirit, even in this present world; for though they have nothing excellent in these outward things, yet they have those exceeding great & precious things provided by God for them. They are in this like unto that heire, of whom *Paul* makes mention, *Gal.*4. 1.

Doct. 4. *By vertue of these promises we are made partakers of the divine nature.*

Now by nature is not meant the essence of God, but those perfections, whereof we have a representation made by the Spirit *Epist.* 1. *c.*2. *v.*9. They are called the vertues of God, and in their places, it is called the life of God, the Image of God, and the Spirit of God. And this nature is communicated by vertue of the promises, because the promise of the Gospell in this differs from the Law, for the Law considered in it selfe is a killing Letter, and the ministration of death in respect of sinners, but the Gospell is the ministration of the quickning Spirit, 2 *Cor.*3 6 7, 8.

Reason. Because the Spirit of God together with the Gospell worketh our salvation.

Vse 1. This may serve *to direct us*, to examine our selves whether the promises of God have beene effectuall in us yet or no? for if we have nothing in us above naturall men, or our corrupt nature, wee are yet strangers to the promises of God.

2. To

2. To reprove those, that are wont to say, when they are stirred up to Christian duties, that they are not Saints or Angels, but flesh and blood, and therefore cannot either abstaine from common vices, or come neere unto a heavenly life. For Christians besides and above that nature, which they have from *Adam*, are made partakers also of a divine nature, whereby they are able to doe all things through him that strengtheneth them, namely Christ, *Phil.* 4.13.

3. To exhort us, to labour with all diligence, that the grace of God may be unto us like a second nature, as some say of *Custome*. And so it will be, when we performe the workes of grace and new obedience, not by constraint or unwillingly, as many use to doe, but with delight and cheerfulnesse, as if we were carried hereunto by the inclination of nature, as the fire is upward.

Doct. 5. *The corruption of sinne is contrary both to this nature, and Gods promises.*

Reason. Because the presence of the divine nature and the vertue of the promises drives out this corruption, as heat doth cold, & as light dispells darkenesse, 1 *Pet.* 1. 14, 15, 2 *Pet.* 2.20. *Tit.* 2.11. 12.

Vse. 1. This may serve *to condemne* those, that will joyne together these things that are so inconsistent and repugnant and contrary to God himselfe, that is, those that joyne the profession of Religion with most corrupt practise.

2. To exhort us, if we believe the promises of God, and love the divine nature to our own salvation, then to eschew all these corruptions. Thus much the Apostle intimates, when he saith: *Having escaped the corruption*, as if a flying away were required, and that quickly, as it were from a fire, wherein we are almost burned, or from a plague that rageth in our houses, 1 *Pet.* 2.11. 2 *Cor.* 4.1. *Having received mercy, let us not faint, &c.* and *Chap.* 7. *v.* 1.

Doct. 6. *This corruption of sinne beares rule in the world.*

This is gathered herehence, because this is the true description of corruption made by the Apostle.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, 1 not to love the world too much. This use the Apostle makes of it, 1 *Iohn* 2. 1 5. 2. Not to fashion our selves according to this world, *Rom.* 12.2.

Doct. 7.

Doct. 7. *Lust is the essentiall cause of this corruption, which is in the world.*

For it is not from the fabrick of heaven and earth, nor in any created substance, but in the naughty affections and dispositions, together with the actions flowing therehence, so that every man carries this world in his owne bowels. And the reason why this wickednesse is signified by concupiscence or lust, is:

Reason 1. Because in mans conversion to worldly and unlawfull things, sinne is more manifest then in a simple aversion from God.

2. Because this desire of unlawfull things is most contrary to that affection, which we should have towards God, and divine and heavenly things.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to use great diligence to subdue and root out our own lusts and concupiscence.

Verse 5. *And besides this, giving all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue knowledge;*

Verse 6. *And to knowledge continence; and to continence, patience; and to patience, godlinesse;*

Verse 7. *And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse; and to brotherly kindnesse, charity.*

The Analysis.

Now the Apostle comes unto that which he chiefly aimed at in this Epistle: and the scope of the Epistle is shewed expresly, Chap. 3. verse 1. namely, *to stirre up the pure mindes of the faithfull, by way of remembrance*; and verse the last, more distinctly, *that they should grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.* This same thing he proposeth in these verses, 5, 6, 7. and confirmes it in the rest of the Chapter, and in the two following Chapters, he vindicates it from those things which crosse this purpose, namely, the seducings of false teachers, chap. 2. and the derisions of prophane scoffers, chap. 3. Now his scope and purpose, as it is explained in these three verses, is, to exhort the faithfull, to apply themselves wholly

wholly to those duties that are answerable to the faith, which they have obtained and do professe. And those duties are set forth; 1. By the common conditions and all the properties of the vertue and duty; and 2. By the species or kindes of vertues and duties. The common conditions and properties of vertue are foure, which are usually called cardinall vertues, *Iustice, Prudence, Temperance, and Fortitude*. Iustice is here signified by the name of vertue, because it doth most neerely belong to the efficacy of vertue, to be according to the rule, which is generall justice. Prudence is signified by knowledge, because prudence and Christian wisdome consists in the practicall knowledge of Gods will. Temperance is called continence, because this is generall temperance, if a man contains himselfe or abstaines from those intisements, whereby he may be withdrawne from his duty. Fortitude is meant here by patience, because this is true Christian fortitude, patiently to suffer all afflictions, and to persist in his duty notwithstanding all afflictions. These are such conditions, that they should be in every duty, which if they be, they make every duty compleat; nor can any of them be away, without hurting of the vertue and duty. The kindes of duties are two: *godlinesse*, which containes the duties of the first table; and *charity*, which belongs unto the second table: which charity is determined by a speciall manner, whileſt it is called also *brotherly love*, whereby we love those, that are joyned in the same faith with us. Concerning these duties the Apostle proposeth first the common act, that we should use in them, namely adding, as he saith, *adde*; Secondly, The manner how we should use this act, namely, *giving all diligence*: where both the manner and the degree is shewed; the manner, is *diligence*, the degree, is *all diligence*. Thirdly, the end and scope of the act and duty in these words, *besides this*, or *hereunto*, that is, to that end of which hee had spoken before, *viz.* that wee might be made partakers of the Divine Nature, and have grace and peace multiplyed.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Our endeavours must be joyned to our prayers, and to the operation of Gods grace.*

This is gathered herehence, that the Apostle saith, we

must labour for that very thing which he wished unto us, and so proposed unto us to be prayed for, and which he said the grace of God did worke in us.

Our endeavours must be joyned unto our prayers.

Reason 1. Because otherwise we cannot have a sincere desire in our prayers, without which our prayers are in vaine; for what we sincerely desire, that also we do alwayes labour to attaine.

2. Because our prayers themselves do bind us to such an endeavour. For in every prayer there is a promise and vow, wherein we promise unto God that we will seeke that which we aske of him: so that to aske any thing of God without such an endeavour, is not only to take Gods name in vaine, but also plainly to mock his Majestie.

Our endeavours also must be joyned with the grace of God, because grace tends thereunto, both to afford us strength to endeavour, and also to stirre us up to exercise that strength.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those slothfull men, which wish for many things, and after their manner also ask them of God, but yet will not move so much as their finger to obtaine them: these men are like that slothfull man, that the wise man describes, *Prov.* 22,13. and elsewhere, where the *slothfull man caries his hand in his bosome*, &c.

2. To exhort us, daily to be mindfull of this obligation, when we pray unto God for the forgiveneſſe of our sinnes, for deliverance from temptations, for newneſſe of life, or any other thing, let us constantly also use our endeavours to attaine these ends.

Doct. 2. *Our endeavours must alwayes tend to the increase of the grace which we have received.*

This is gathered therehence, that the summe of our duty consists in adding: the reasons are divers;

Reason 1. Because that is imperfect which we have: while we remaine in this life, we are in a state of progresse and edifying; not of rest or perfection, *Ephes.* 4.12,13.

2. Because that which we have received, is given unto us to be an earnest, a pledge, and the first fruits of that which we yet looke and seek for.

3. Because it cannot be, that we should rightly esteeme the grace

grace that we have received, if we do not labour to attaine the higheſt degree thereof, but reſt contented with the benefit that we have received, and never look for any more of that kinde.

4. Becauſe we cannot keepe that which we have received, if we doe not labour to increaſe it; for as the vitall heat doth alwayes either increaſe or decreaſe, and he that goes up a ſandy-hill, muſt ſtill labour to get up, or elſe he will ſlide downe; ſo it is in a Chriſtian life.

5. Becauſe we ſhould do that unto God, which we would have God doe unto us; for we would have God alwayes adde unto thoſe benefits and bleſſings which he beſtoweth upon us: we therefore ſhould likewiſe adde unto thoſe duties which we performe unto him.

Uſe 1. This may ſerve to condemne thoſe, that reſt ſatisfied with that which they have, and never ſeeke farther, and much more thoſe, that by diminiſhing and loſing, waſte and conſume that which they had, *Apoc.* 2. 4. This may be explained by the parable of the talents.

2. To exhort us, to exerciſe a holy kinde of covetouſneſſe in theſe ſpirituall things; for as covetous men joyne houſe to houſe, field to field, *Iſay* 5. 8. ſo ſhould we alſo joyne faith to faith, obedience to obedience, charity to charity.

Doct. 3. *We muſt uſe our endeavours about theſe ſpirituall things with all diligence.*

Now by all diligence is meant, 1. The greateſt heedfulneſſe of the minde. 2. The greateſt earneſtneſſe of the will. 3. The greateſt care, that is intimated by that phraſe, whereby wee are commanded, to *ſeeke the kingdome of God and the righteouſneſſe thereof.* For when Chriſt had told them, *Matth.* 6. 31. that they ſhould not be carefull what they ſhould eat, or what they ſhould drink, he explaines this care, verſe 32, 33. by the phraſe of *ſeeking.* 4. A diligence in the uſe of the meanes, whereby we may come to attaine that which we deſire. And the reaſons why we ſhould uſe this diligence about ſpirituall things, are,

Reaſon 1. The dignity and excellency of theſe things above all earthly things, which worldly men are ſo buſie about.

2. The difficulty, for in their nature they are above our

strength, and there are many impediments also, as well inward as outward, which we cannot overcome, but by using all diligence.

3. The necessity of these things, without which we are miserable wretches.

Use 1. This may serve to reprove the slothfull and sluggish Christians, that are so remisse, so cold and luke-warme at least in these things, which require so great diligence. Here appeares the crossenesse of mans disposition: for when God hath forbidden us, to be over-carefull about worldly things, because all these things should be added unto us without such care; and hath commanded us, to be diligent and carefull about spirituall things, because we shall never be partakers of them without diligence; we on the contrary are carefull and diligent about the world, and neglect Heaven.

2. To exhort us, by all meanes daily to stir up our selves, and to provoke one another to this so necessary diligence.

Doct. 4. *Faith is the fountaine and beginning of all Christian vertue.*

This is gathered from the text. Because faith is here laid as the foundation upon which all vertues are to be built.

Reason 1. Because without faith no man can please God unto everlasting life, and therefore the very vertues of unbelievers, although they be pleasing unto God in themselves, especially if a comparison be made betwixt them and vices, yet they are not pleasing unto God unto salvation, or such as that they may expect a spirituall reward from God; and therefore if a comparison be made betwixt them and the vertues of the faithfull, they may not unfitly be called, *splendida peccata*, glorious sinnes.

2. Because to the making up of vertue there is required not only good matter and forme, but also the beginning and end. Now in a heart destitute of faith there is not the beginning of Christian vertue, and from the defect of this beginning there followes also a defect, both in the end, and in the forme. The manner how faith produceth vertue, is, 1. In regard of the object which it layes hold of, because all grace and vertue is derived from Christ. 2. In regard of the effect, because faith purifies the heart of man, and so makes it fit for such operati-

ons

ons and dispositions. 3. Because faith it selfe is an impulsive argument, moving us to labour for vertue.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those imprudent builders, that neglect faith and seeke for vertue, as if they would build the roofe of the house, and not lay the foundation.

2. To exhort us, to have great care of faith, because all vertues depend upon it.

Doct. 5. *Vertue is the glory of faith.*

This is gathered therehence, that it is said it must be added to faith as something belonging to the perfection thereof. Now it is not an essentiall perfection, but complementall; not internall properly, but externall.

Reason 1. Because faith without vertue is not a living, but a dead faith.

2. Because vertue is the end of faith.

3. Because it is the adorning thereof.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, that boast of faith and neglect vertue, such were many even in the Apostles time, as appeares by the Epistle of *Iames*.

2. To exhort us, to give all diligence, to adde vertue to faith.

Doct. 6. *The perfection of vertue depends upon knowledge.*

This is gathered from that; *To vertue adde knowledg*. By knowledge we meane, not so much that intellectuall vertue, which is properly called *scientia*, knowledge, as understanding, wisdome, and prudence, all which are signified in the Scriptures by the right *knowledge of Gods will*. Now this knowledge is necessary unto vertue both in generall and particular.

Reason 1. Because *virtus est habitus electivus*, vertue is an habit pertaining to election, or hath good election joyned with it. Now to this election it is required, that a man should rightly know the end, and also the meanes that lead unto the end, and the manner also how he may come to the end by those meanes.

2. Because *actiones virtutum versantur in particularibus*, the actions of vertues are in particulars, and therefore it is not sufficient to judge aright of good and evill in generall, unlesse that judgement be also applyed to particular actions, according to their circumstances.

Vse 1.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, that please themselves in their ignorance, as if ignorance were the mother of devotion, or of any vertue, whereas it is the greatest enemy to vertue, and the mother of all profanenesse, especially it it be voluntary, as *Peter* shewes, Epist. 2. Chap. 3. verse 5 Where he gives a reason of their great wickednesse, because those scoffers of whom he speaks, were willingly ignorant of those things which pertaine unto true godlinesse.

2. To exhort us, to seeke for knowledge, and when wee have gotten it, to apply it also to the increase of vertue. For vertue without knowledge is blinde, and knowledge without vertue is vaine.

Doct. 7. *Continence or temperance is the perfection of knowledge.*

Now by continence and temperance we meane a moderation, whereby all lusts are suppressed that might allure or withdraw us to any thing that is contrary to vertue and knowledge.

Reason 1. Because knowledge tends to such a moderation and governement of the affections.

2. Because knowledge it selfe cannot subsist without this moderation. For unlesse the affections are directed by knowledge, knowledge it selfe is corrupted by the affections: hence it is, that many errours and heresies oftentimes take their rise and beginning from evill manners and affections, *Ephes.* 4. 18.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, that are puffed up with knowledge, when in the meane time they shew by their intemperance, that they know nothing yet, as they ought to know, 1 *Cor.* 8. 1, 2.

2. To exhort us, to use all our knowledge to the governement of our affections and manners.

Doct. 8. *Patience must be joyned with continence to the perfection of vertue.*

By patience we meane that grace whereby we continue and persist in well-doing, although we are crossed by many grievous things. Therefore it includes in it patience, constancy, and stableneſse of minde, or Christian fortitude. Continence strengthens vertue against alluring intisements, and patience

against

against all adversity, so that vertue is quite perfected, if it be grounded on faith, directed by knowledge, and strengthened on the one side by continence, and on the other side by patience.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove the lightnesse and inconstancy of men, who indeed professe themselves to be studious of vertue, and yet can beare no thing, to keepe vertue whole and intire.

2. To exhort all good men, to prepare themselves to beare all afflictions for vertue sake and a good conscience.

Doct. 9. *Godlinesse is the chiefe and most necessary of all vertues.*

By *godlinesse* we meane true religion towards God, and a minde wholly given to the true worship of God.

Reason 1. Because it hath the noblest object, that is, God himselfe.

2. Because it doth most of all perfect all other vertues, whiles it refers them and all their acts to a divine beginning, and a divine end. For godlinesse subjects the minde to God in all things, so that it acknowledgeth God to be the author of all good, *from whom every good and perfect gift commeth*, and makes him the chiefest good and the last end to whom all our actions are to be directed.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, that attribute so much to some morall and humane vertues, that they preferre them before godlinesse.

2. To exhort us, continually to exercise our selves both in publick and in private, to increase this godlinesse in our mindes.

Doct. 10. *With Godlinesse towards God we should joyne love towards our neighbour.*

Reason. Because godlinesse it selfe commands and begets this love. For we love our neighbour with Christian love, when we love him for Gods sake, not for our own, or any worldly respect. Now godlinesse produceth this love towards our neighbour, 1 Because it teacheth us to obey Gods Commandement, who hath commanded us to love our neighbour. 2 Because it teacheth us to love the image of God, and every gift of God in our neighbour. 3 Because it brings us to imitate

imitate God himselfe in the communicating of good. Therefore godlinesse, which is separated from charity, is not true godlinesse; and that charity which is separated from godlinesse, is not true charity, but either hypocrisie, or some humane civility.

Vse 1. This may serve to exhort us, to shew and adorne our godlinesse towards God, by our love towards our neighbour.

2. To reprove those, that make shew of much godlinesse towards God, when in the meane time they take all occasions to wrong their neighbours, if so be they might by any means advantage themselves thereby.

Doct. 11. *This love should be extended unto all men, but chiefly to be used towards the brethren.*

For so they are distinctly set downe, verse 7. *Brotherly kindnesse and charity*: Both of these is proper and peculiar to Christians. For the Christian alone loves all, even his enemies, and he alone also loves the brethren, that is, the household of faith. We should love all, 1. As they are partakers of the same naturall good with us. 2. As they are capable also of the same spirituall good. And we should love the faithfull also, as they are partakers of the same spirituall good with us.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to edifie our selves in this charity, which is the character of Christianity.

Verse 8. *For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.*

The Analysis.

HEre the Apostle begins to confirme the exhortation, which he had before made, to adde vertue to faith, and knowledge, &c. And he confirmes it by a twofold argument; 1. The first is taken from the benefit which is joyned to these vertues, whereunto he exhorts them. 2. The second from the disprofit, which followes the privation or absence of them. The first is laid downe, verse 8. the second verse 9. The benefit

fit proposed is contained in these words, *they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitfull*: where by a negation is meant the contrary affirmation, namely, that by these vertues they shall be quick and active, and also fruitfull; which benefits are explained by the primary efficient cause, which is the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ; and the secondary cause, which are the vertues themselves whereunto he exhorts them. And these vertues he explaines according to that way which he had intimated before in the exhortation, touching the manner, and touching the degree: touching the manner, that they *be in you*; touching the degree, that *they abound*.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *There are spirituall benefits arising from vertues, whereby the faithfull are stirred up to labour for vertue.*

This is gathered from the scope of this verse, and from the connexion which it hath with the former exhortation. These benefits are such, that they cannot be understood by carnall and worldly men; but the faithfull do not only understand them, but also seeke for them with great and continuall diligence. Otherwise this argument which the Apostle useth to the faithfull, would have beene altogether uneffectuall. But these benefits are such, that they make men rich, not in this world, but in the Lord, 1 *Tim.* 6. 18. *Luke* 12. 21.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those earthly men, which are not moved with such arguments, but covet the gaine, profits, and pleasures of this life, and savour not those things that belong to the kingdome of God.

Doct. 2. *It is a great benefit to the faithfull, and so they esteeme it, if they can be ready to do good works.*

This is gathered from that, *they make you that ye shall not be barren*, that is, not idle or slothfull in the profession of religion.

Reason 1. Because it is the greatest misery for men to be reprobate unto good workes.

2. Because by this readinesse to do good, the faithfull come to obtaine their desires.

3. Because by this meanes the life spirituall is exercised and increased. For as all life is the beginning of operation, and tends unto operation, so also is it increased by operations.

4. Because the glory of God, wherein consists the chiefest good, and mans happinesse, is by this meanes advanced.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those foolish and slothfull Christians, that neglect their owne proper good, or rather do not understand what that is wherein it consists.

2. To exhort us, by all meanes to make our selves ready to do good, and therefore according to the minde of the Apostle in this place, to get all vertue, *that we may not be barren in the knowledge of Christ.*

Doct. 3. *Good workes are fruits that the faithfull should continually bring forth.*

This is gathered therehence, that fruitfulnesse is both required and promised in this place. It is required therein, that the Apostle intimates, that this is necessary for the faithfull, to be fruitfull. It is promised thereby, that it is made as a benefit arising from vertues. Good workes are called *fruits* by a metaphor, for the likenesse that they have unto the fruits of trees and plants. Now in naturall fruit many things are considered, which according to the Scripture must be applyed unto good workes. 1. That it be something agreeable to the nature of the seed from which it ariseth. 2. That it hath not only some good in it, but also perfections; hence flowers and leaves are not wont to be called fruits, although they come from the same seed that the fruits do, and be the last two that comes forth, and hath in it that perfection, that it is the end both of the seed, and all other things that arise from the seed before the fruit. 3. It is required also, especially in those that arise from good husbandry, that there be something that is desired and expected and will be acceptable to the husbandman, and master, or owner. All these things in the Scriptures are to be applyed unto good works, 1. That they be agreeable to the word of God, which is the seed, as it is in the Parables, *Matth.* 13. *Marke* 4. of the good seed: and good workes differ from tares, as grapes differ from wilde grapes, *Isay* 5.2. 2. That they have goodnesse in them. For bad workes neither are properly fruits according to Scripture, unlesse it be with an addition, *evill fruits.* Nor do they bring any fruit to their authors, *Rom.* 6 21. They must also have perfection in their kinde: for as the seeds which are said in the parable to arise,

arise, perhaps unto the eare, yet because they did not come to just perfection, are said to have brought forth no fruits: so also Christians, which have only the flowers and leaves of profession, and not the solid workes of godlinesse, are accounted by God unfruitfull and barren plants. 3. Our workes also must answer the expectation of God, and that care which he hath taken in manuring our soules, *Isay* 5.2. *Luke* 13. 6, 7. & 20.10. Although in all these things our good workes and fruits are alike, yet one thing may be observed, wherein they are unlike; namely, that whereas the profit of naturall fruits is wont to returne to the husbandman and master, the profit of these fruits redounds properly to those that beare them, *Rom.* 6. 12. Although hence also something redounds unto God our master, *John* 15.8.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that bring forth no fruit, *Matthew* 3.10. *John* 15.2. *Luke* 13.7. Much more are they to be condemned, that are like unto the cursed ground, and in steed of fruits bring forth thornes and briers, *Hebr.* 6.8. *Deut.* 32.32.

2. To exhort us, by all meanes to labour to bring forth good fruits, and so also that they may be answerable unto those meanes which God used towards us, to make us fruitfull, according to Gods expectation, and in that season wherein God expects them, and in that measure also which he expects, of some thirty, of some sixty, and of some an hundred fold.

Doct. 4 *Without these fruits the knowledge of God is unprofitable.*

For it is as it were choaked with thornes, or withered away.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to be so much the more carefull to bring forth fruit, that we may not heape up this sinne of barrennesse unto the other, by making the word of God void and of no effect.

Doct. 5. *That we may be fruitfull, vertues must not only be in us, but also abound in us.*

They are in us when we have gotten a habit of them; they abound, when we do seriously and diligently endeavour to make that habit more perfect.

Verse 9. *But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see farre off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sinnes.*

The Analysis.

THis is the second argument whereby the exhortation of the Apostle is confirmed; and it is taken from the disprofits that befall all those that are strangers to these vertues. And these disprofits are contrary to those profits whereof mention was made in the former verse. For the Apostle would say that they which have not these vertues, are quite barren and unfruitfull. But he doth not barely expresse this, but sets it forth by the causes thereof. And the causes are two, blindnesse and forgetfulnesse. For he that is blinde, must needs be barren and unfruitfull, and unfit to do those businesses especially, which require the eye sight: and he that forgets the benefit which he hath received, it is no wonder, if he bring forth no fruit worthy of that benefit. Their forgetfulnesse is set forth by the object or benefit which they should remember, that is, their purification from their old sinnes. By blindnesse in this place is meant, not the privation of their corporall sight, or of their naturall understanding, but of that spirituall perfection, whereby we come to the saving knowledge of those things that pertaine to the kingdome of God, and our eternall life. By those things that are *farre off*, are meant things truly spirituall, which as touching their nature and condition, are as farre off from carnall men as heaven is from earth.

The Doctrines arising here-hence.

Doct. 1. *All that are destitute of vertue are spiritually blinde.*

They are blinde in a twofold respect. 1. In respect of that naturall blindnesse, wherein all the sonnes of *Adam* are born, like that man that was blinde from his birth, *Iohn* 9. 1. And secondly, in respect of another adventitious blindnesse, which they have brought upon themselves by their sinnes, through the just judgement of God blinding those that will not see, like

like that sorcerer, *Acts* 13. 11. upon whom the hand of the Lord seemes to have beene, to blinde him. The former blindnesse goes before as the cause, *viz.* the neglect of vertue; the other followes as the effect. And both of them appeares by those signes that corporall blindnesse doth.

Reason 1. Because those men know not the speciall way wherein they should go.

2. They cannot see those stumbling-blocks that lye in the way, but continually stumble and fall.

3. They cannot so much as discerne the colours of those things which they handle, and therefore as it is, *Isay* 5.20. *They call evill good, and good evill, &c.* And one thing there is that addes to their misery more then is in those that are corporally blinde; namely, that they seeke not fit guides to leade them, as it is said of the sorcerer, that he did, *Acts* 13. 11. for either they trust wholly to themselves, because they doe not know that they are blinde, *Apoc.* 3.17. or else they follow some blinde guide, so that both fall into the ditch.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to acknowledge our spirituall blindnesse, and to labour to get out of it. For it is in every one of us either in whole or in part. We should therefore thinke with our selves how great a misery it is to continue in perpetuall darknesse and in a most thick myst. Christ wept over Jerusalem for this their blindnesse.

2. To exhort us earnestly to pray unto God, who can open the eyes of our minde. The blinde man, *Luke* 18. 38. never ceased to cry out, saying, *Iesus thou Sonne of David have mercy on me*, and when Christ asked him, what he would that he should do unto him, he desired nothing else, but that he might receive his sight, verse 41. So also in spirituall blindnesse, although a great part of it was cured in *David*, yet we see that he constantly prayes unto God, to open his eyes, *Psal.* 119.18. So also the Apostle saith, that he ceased not to pray for the faithfull, that the eyes of their understanding might be enlightned, *Ephes.* 1.18. This is the counsell of the holy Ghost, and of Christ, *Apoc.* 3.18.

3. To instruct us, never to think that we have received sight, untill we finde in our selves this study and labour to abound in vertue.

Doct.

Doct. 2. *The forgetting of Gods benefits is a great evill and sinne, and brings misery along with it.*

For it is here attributed unto those, that are strangers unto vertue, not only as a sinne, but also as a great disprofit, and is opposed to that fruitfulnesse wherein the happinesse of the faithfull doth consist. It is a sinne, because it containes ingratitude in it, and that not the least degree of ingratitude; for though a man be mindfull of the benefit which he hath received, purposing to be thankfull for it, yet if he doth not render thankes, he is said to be ungratefull; yea, and though he doth render thankes, if he doth it coldly, and doth not endeavour to answer the merits of him that bestowed this benefit upon him, and the dignity of the benefit, he is not yet free from this vice; but if he doth quite forget the benefit which he hath received, then he is rightly said to be as it were twice ungratefull.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to beware of this kinde of ingratitude, and not to think our selves ungratefull then only, when we do repay evill for good, but also when we doe any way forget the benefit which we have received.

Doct. 3. *God accounts him forgetfull of the benefits which he hath received, that is not effectually mindfull of them, that is, that doth not so remember them, as to live answerably.*

This is gathered therehence, that fruitfulnesse and forgetfulnesse are opposed. For they are made immediately contraries, so that there is no *medium* betweene them. *Deut.* 32. 18. The Israelites are said to have forgotten God for that reason only, because they had forsaken the true worship of God, and his due obedience, as it is explained, verse 15. So *Psal.* 106. 13. where they are said to have forgotten God and his workes, as often as they murmured against him, although there is no doubt but if they had beene asked, they could have easily related the whole history of those things that God had done for them in Egypt. After the like manner are the words of Christ to be understood, when he asked his Disciples, whether they had forgotten the miracle of the five loaves and two fishes, intimating that it was a manifest token of their forgetfulnesse, that they were at that time so troubled about bread.

Vse

Vse. 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to rest satisfied with such a memory as consists in bare contemplation, which God accounts forgetfulnesse.

2. To exhort us, by all meanes to study this art of memory.

Which that we may the better do, let us observe these Rules.

Rule 1. That we do not slightly passe over the thought of these things, but look narrowly into the natures and circumstances of them. For the more plainly we come to understand them, the more firmely do we retaine them.

Rule 2. That having come to such a cleare knowledge of them, we should also call them to minde, so as to consider the efficacy of them; for the more they worke upon the affections, the stronger is the impression upon the memory: thence is it, that children are wont to remember many things, which others forget, because they use to admire all things as new and strange; and wee also doe not easily forget those things which we admire, as being things wherewith we are much taken, *Psal.* 119. 16. *I will delight my selfe in thy statutes*, there is the affection; *and I will not forget thy word*, there is the memory flowing from the affection.

Rule 3. That we should alwayes carry a memoriall with us, whereby the memory of these things may be kept. *Numb.* 16. 40. *This is a memoriall.* Now our memoriall is the word of God chiefly, which in that respect we should daily read and meditate upon.

Doct. 4. *Our purification from sinne is a benefit never to be forgotten.*

Reason 1. Because it is very great in it selfe and its owne nature, seeing by it we are freed from the guilt and dominion of sinne, from the curse of the law, from the anger of God and eternall death.

2. Because it is of great force and efficacy to stirre us up to labour to be thankfull, and to abound in vertue, as here it appeares by the manner of arguing, which the Apostle useth. For that cause also *Paul*, *Rom.* 12. 1. and in other places exhorteth the faithfull *by the mercies of God.*

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that do either not

not think at all upon the mercy of God, and redemption through Christ; or else turne it into an occasion of sinne.

2. To exhort us, daily to meditate upon this benefit, and not to satisfie our selves, unlesse we are daily stirred up by this argument to the practise of piety.

Doct. 5. *All the sinnes from which we are purged in Christ, must be accounted old, that is, out of use, forsaken, dead, never to be taken up againe.*

Verse 10. *Wherefore, the rather brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.*

Verse 11. *For so an entrance shall be ministred unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdome of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ:*

The Analysis.

IN these words is contained the conclusion of the Apostles exhortation, as it is intimated in the first word, *Wherefore*. Now because the conclusion and the question must alwayes be the same, as touching the thing it selfe, although they differ in some respects, there is no doubt but the Apostle here concludes the same thing, which he had before, verse 5. propounded to himselfe to be concluded, *viz. That they should give all diligence to adde to their faith vertue*, &c. And as repetitions in the Scripture are not wont to be vaine, nor bare, but for the most part with some usury or increase; so also in this place he doth not barely repeat the exhortation to labour for vertue, but he doth illustrate this endeavour and labour by the proper office thereof, that is, by the confirmation of our calling and election; so that he doth both repeat the exhortation, and also adde a new argument, and that a most weighty one, to presse it the more, after this manner: *If by the exercise of good workes ye make your election and calling sure, then should ye most of all apply your selves thereunto: but the former is true, Therefore.* The assumption is laid downe in the text, and proved by a double argument. 1. By

removing

removing the contrary or Apostasie, which is most opposite to the assurance of our election and calling; and is alike opposite also to the exercise of vertue and good workes, which is shewed in these words: *If ye do these things, ye shall never fall:* wherein is such a reason contained, if ye shall never fall, then ye will have your calling sure. The second argument is taken from the felicity adjoyned, which is set forth by the proper cause thereof, that is, *by the abundant entrance into the everlasting kingdome of Christ.* And this argument strengthens both the conclusion and also the foregoing argument, after this manner: *If ye have abundant entrance into the everlasting kingdome of Christ, then ye shall never fall, but hold your calling sure; But if ye labour to be vertuous and to do good workes, ye shall have abundant entrance into the everlasting kingdome of Christ: therefore if ye labour to be vertuous and to do good workes, ye shall never fall, but have your calling sure.* But before we consider the conclusion it selfe which the Apostle layes downe, there comes the manner to be observed, how he doth propound it, that so it may worke the deeper. Now the manner is shewed in that title which he gives unto the faithfull, when he cals them *brethren*, which is not only a title of good will, but of some speciall and singular love, such as useth to be betwixt these men that are most neerly joyned together.

Obser. Here we may observe in generall, *That our exhortations must be seasoned with love and good will*; but more especially it affords us this Observation, *That there is not a more brotherly office, then to stirre up and bring those that we love, to labour and endeavour to lead a Christian life.*

Reason 1. Because by this meanes they are delivered from the greatest evils, *Iames* 5.20.

2. Because they are made partakers of the greatest good, as it appeares in the text.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, to take in good part such exhortations and admonitions that are given us, whether they be in publick or in private.

2. To exhort us, to season our exhortations and admonitions after this manner, and so to be more frequent in these duties. For oftentimes he that neglects these duties, shewes that he doth hate his brother and is his enemy; they being

proper to brethren, and the neereſt and deareſt friends, *Levit.* 19. 17.

The Doctrines ariſing herehence.

Doct. 1. *The aſſurance of our calling and election is a thing greatly to be deſired.*

This is gathered from the text: becauſe *Peter* in this exhortation preſuppoſeth ſome ſuch deſire in the faithfull, and then ſtirres them up to a more fervent and earneſt deſire of it.

Reaſon. Becauſe our happineſſe and all ſpirituall good things are greatly to be deſired, and they depend upon this aſſurance of our calling and election. For election is the free love of God, whereby he intends ſaving grace, or ſupernaturall bleſſings unto us. Our calling is the manifeſtation of that love by the application of this ſaving grace. The aſſurance of both conſiſts, 1. in Gods unchangeable purpoſe, 2 *Tim.* 2. 19. *The foundation of God ſtandeth ſure.* 2. In the effectuall operation, which thoſe bleſſings of God have in us, as in that place of *Timothy*, *that foundation hath this ſeale, that whoſoever cals on the name of Chriſt, ſhould depart from iniquity.* 3. In aſſurance of faith, confidence, and experimentall knowledge, which we come to have both of Gods purpoſe towards us, and the effectuall and ſaving operation thereof in our hearts.

Vſe 1. This may ſerve to condemne thoſe that have no affection at all unto theſe ſpirituall good things, but reſt well pleaſed in the things of this world. They are like unto the rebellious Iſraelites, who more deſired the Onions and Garlick of Egypt, then the Milke and Honey of the promiſed Land, or the celeſtiall Manna, *Numb.* 11. 5, 6. They are farre worſe then the Prodigall Sonne, if they alwayes reſt ſatisfied with the Swines huſks, and never deſire the bread that is in their fathers houſe, *Luke* 15. 16. 17.

2. To exhort us, to labour for a ſpirituall hunger and thirſt after theſe ſpirituall good things: God himſelfe ſhewes us the beſt meanes, who, when he would ſtirre up the people of Iſrael to deſire the promiſed land, forthwith commended unto them the riches of the land, wherewith it did abound: ſo alſo ſhould we alwayes ſet before our eyes thoſe innumerable bleſſings, which depend upon our calling and election.

Doct.

Doct. 2. *It belongs to our duty to make this our calling and election sure.*

Give diligence. Not as they are in the purpose of God, but as they have an effectuall operation in us, whereby they are certainly manifested and sealed unto us; and this is the reason why our calling is set before election: for although election be eternall in God, and our calling be in time; yet we come to know our calling before our election, and the knowledge of our election depends upon the effectualnesse of our calling.

Reason 1. Because although God himselfe causeth this, yet he doth it partly by morall perswasions and by those meanes wherein our endeavour is required.

2. Because there are no effects of our calling and election, which are not also our effects, because God makes us to doe them.

3. Because that very thing which God doth in this kinde, we are in some sort said to doe, if we beg it of him by continuall prayer.

4. Because Gods confirmation of it is such, that it requires also the like confirmation of us. God confirmes our calling and election by his promise, his covenant, sacraments, oath, and spirituall pledge: And these things do in like manner require of us our promise, and vow, to cleave unto God, our covenant, faith, and endeavour, and all those things whereby we may be confirmed in that communion which we have with God.

Use 1. This may serve to comfort us, because the certainty and assurance of our calling and election is not only possible for us to attaine unto, but also commanded us; so that nothing is more pleasing unto God, then that we should labour to be more and more assured of these things: for this is the end both of the promise and the precept.

2. To reprove those, that either altogether neglect this primary duty of the faithfull, or take such slight care of it, that they must needs alwayes waver in their minds touching those things whereof they should be most assured. Dangerous is that doctrine of the Papists, that holds mens minds alwayes in suspense, both in life and death. For in life they accuse this

firme confidence of presumption, and in death they leave wretched men in doubt, how long they shall be tormented in Purgatory.

3. To exhort us to this labour and diligence; and indeed this indeavour is inseparable from a true and lively faith: for look how it is amongst men; if one did beleeve that he had an inheritance left him by his Father, or any other, he would never be at quiet, till he had gotten it assured unto him, according to the lawes and customes of the countrey wherein he lives; so is it with the faithfull also touching these spirituall good things.

Doct. 3. *All those, and those alone, make their election sure, that make their calling sure.*

These two God hath joyned together, as the Apostle doth in this place, so that no man ought or may dis-joyne them. Hence election and calling are taken sometimes in the Scriptures for one and the same, as 1 *Cor.* 1.26,27. that which is called *calling*, verse 26. is called *election*, verse 27. There is indeed an outward and ineffectuall calling, which is many times separated from election, as when it is said, *Many are called, but few are chosen.* But effectuall and saving calling hath alwayes a sure connexion with election, as *Rom.* 8.30. and 11.28.29.

Reason. Because this calling is nothing else but the operation of God, whereby in time he begins to execute that purpose of election, which he had decreed from everlasting.

Use 1. This may serve to reprove those, that are wont to boast of their election and predestination, when in the meane time they never looke after their calling or conversion, to demonstrate it either to themselves or others. It is presumption, whatsoever men say of their election, if they are not first assured of their calling.

2. To comfort all the faithfull that are penitent, converted, and called, because all those may and ought to be sure of their election.

Doct. 4. *An endeavour to abound in vertue, and to do good workes is the only meanes to make our calling and election sure.*

This is gathered from these words, *If ye do these things.*

Reason 1. Because these are the proper effects of calling and election. 2. They

2. They are the causes of that knowledge which we have of our calling and election. For the knowledge and assurance of these things depends upon the reflex act of our understanding, whereby we see in our selves the markes and signes of effectuall calling, and consequently of eternall election. Hence this assurance increaseth and decreaseth in us, according as our endeavour to abound in vertues, and to do good workes is greater or lesser.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute those, that teach that the assurance of election crosseth the practise of piety, whereas there is as great an agreement betwixt these, as is betwixt the effect and the cause, which absolutely agree.

2. To condemne those, that from this doctrine of the assurance of election, take occasion to cast off all care of piety: these are they that the Apostle speaks of, c. 3 v. 16. *who being unlearned and unstable, wrest the Scriptures unto their owne destruction.* Although the election of God be sure in it selfe, yet no man is sure of it without the practice of piety. Then againe the certainty of election that is in God, makes this certaine, that no man shall ever be saved by vertue of election, unlesse there be in him the practise of piety: such words or thoughts are certaine tokens of a prophane soule, which neither cares for election nor salvation, nor hath any feare of God. For whereas it is alike certaine with God, how long every one of us shall live in this world, yet there is none that cares not for his life, or useth not the meanes to live, unlesse he be quite mad: so from the certainty of election none concludes after such a manner, unlesse he be altogether prophane.

3. To exhort us, to stirre up our selves more and more to do these things, whereby we shall receive so great fruit and benefit.

Doct. 5. *By labouring to do these things we are fore-armed against the dangers of all temptations.*

If ye do these things, ye shall never fall.

Reason 1. Because we are never led into temptation without our owne fault, and consequently without the neglect of this duty.

2. We are never led into temptation, unlesse we have first tempted God, by forsaking those meanes, whereby we might be upheld and preserved.

3. God

3. God can and will defend those that flye unto him, and that seeke him in his wayes. Hither tend those frequent promises, such as are *Psal.* 15. *the last words*, and *Psal.* 16. 8.

Doct. 6. *The more we are freed from the fals of sinne, the more are we assured of our calling and election.*

This is gathered from the opposition, which is made betwixt the assurance of our calling and our fals.

Reason. The reason is taken from the contrariety; for like as the more the darkneſſe is dispelled, the more the light increaseth, and on the contrary; so is it in these things.

Doct. 7. *Look what progresse we make in grace and vertue, so much progresse do we make in glory and happinesse.*

This is gathered from the connexion of the eleventh verse with the former, the force whereof consists in this, that by adding vertue unto faith, and knowledge unto vertue, we shall adde also something unto that participation, which we have in the kingdome of God: where it is to be observed that the same word is used in this eleventh verse, where he speakes of glory, that was used, verse 5. where he spake of vertue; there it was ἐπιχορηγήσατε, here ἐπιχορηγηθήσεται.

Reason. The reason is, becauſe as in evill the sinne is never separated from the punishment, but in the sinne it selfe there is the spot or blemish, which is like unto misery; so also in good the obedience and vertue is never separated from the reward. For it hath alwayes joyned with it that consolation which perraines to the reward of happinesse.

Use 1. This may serve to comfort us against the afflictions of this life; for although the faithfull receive no reward from this world, by reason of the iniquity of men, but hatred, disgrace, contempt, and persecutions: yet they may rest well contented in this, that they shall not only receive an ample reward in the life to come, but also they shall receive it in some sort in this life present, *Matth.* 5. 10. 12. & 19. 29.

2. To exhort us to labour to increase in piety, for as much as this labour is not in vaine, but hath its reward even in this present world, 1 *Cor.* 15. *last.*

Doct 8. *This happinesse consists in being made partakers of the everlasting kingdome of God.*

By the *kingdome of God* is meant properly that condition into

into which the faithfull are translated by their effectuall calling: now seeing there are no degrees of this condition, this kingdome is distinguished into the kingdome of *grace*, and the kingdome of *glory*. Into the kingdome of *grace*, because the preaching and ministery of the Gospell is the efficient cause thereof, therefore the Gospell it selfe is called in Scripture *the kingdome of God*, and because the Church is the proper subject of this state and condition, therefore the Church is also called *the kingdome of God*; and because spirituall grace hath the chiefe part in this condition, therefore that also is called the *kingdome of God*, *Rom.* 14 17. but most properly the condition it selfe is *the kingdome of God*. And it is compared to a kingdome rather then to a Democracy or Aristocracy, or any other society.

Reason 1. Because of the dignity and splendour which it hath.

2. Because the rule or governement is in the power of one. For although it is called sometimes the kingdome of God, sometimes the kingdome of our Lord Jesus Christ, as in this place; yet they are not made two Kings as touching the essence, but thereby it is shewed that he hath a singular charge in this kingdome.

3. Because the lawes and edicts of this society are altogether Kingly and Monarchicall; the seales also, and all things that pertaine to this government, beare the effigies as it were, or image of one King.

Vse 1. This may serve to comfort the faithfull, who should think with them selves, and often call to minde, unto what a great happinesse they are called. For that which *David* said heretofore, 1 *Sam.* 18.23. *Seemeth it to you a light thing to be a Kings sonne in law?* that may all the faithfull say of themselves in respect of this kingdome, that it is not a light thing to be made Citizens of this kingdome, and especially seeing we are poore and vile creatures, the greater will our comfort be, when we consider the glory and eternity of this kingdome. The glory is such that the kingdomes of *David* and *Solomon*, even in the greatest glory that ever they had, were but imperfect representations and shadowes as it were of this kingdome. For they were but types of it. So great is the glory of this

kingdome

kingdome, that all the Citizens and Subjects thereof are in some sort Kings, *Apoc.*1.6. The eternity is such, that neither in whole nor in part is it lyable unto an end, or any essentiall change. Compare all the kingdomes of the *Persians, Medes,* and *Grecians,* all which are abolished; this kingdome of God alone continues for ever.

2. To reprove those, that professe themselves Christians, and yet live so as if they were under no lawes, & did acknowledge no King. For as this is reckoned as the cause that the Israelites did runne into all kind of wickednesse, because there was no king in Israel, but every one did that which was right in his owne eyes, *Iudges* 17.6.& 18.1. So also do these men as it were proclaime, that they neither acknowledge Christ nor God for their King, while they do that which seemes right in their own eyes, not caring whether it do please God, or displease him. Such men must expect that sentence of Christ, which is laid downe, *Luke* 19.27. *Those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne over them, bring hither and slay them before me.*

3. To exhort all to seeke this kingdome of God above all other things, according as Christ bids us; *first seeke the kingdome of God.* And not only the happinesse of those that are admitted to be partakers of this kingdome, but also the misery of all those that are excluded from it, should be an argument to perswade hereunto: for there are two spirituall kingdomes, and every man must needs be a subject of one of them: the kingdome of light and the kingdome of darkenesse; the kingdome of righteousnesse and grace, and the kingdome of sinne; the kingdome of God, and the kingdome of the Devill, who is called the Prince of this world. All those that are excluded out of the kingdome of God, of grace and salvation, are necessarily included in the kingdome of the Devill, sinne and darkenesse; and deservedly doth this befall all unbeleevers and impenitent men, according to that commination, *Deut.* 28.45.

Doct. 9. *The faithfull must seeke not only to have an entrance into the kingdome of God, but also an entrance in a plentifull and abundant manner.*

Men may be considered to be in a fourefold condition in respect

respect of the kingdome of God. For some are very farre off from it: namely, such as the Apostle speaks of, *Ephes.* 2. 12. *That are without Christ, and without God, aliens from the Common-wealth of Israel, strangers from the covenants of promise*: such are all those that either understand nothing at all of those things which pertaine unto this kingdome, or else nothing care for them, having their consciences seared as it were with a hot iron, as the Apostle speaks, 1 *Tim.* 4. 2. Others there are which come neere unto the kingdome of God, although they are not partakers of it, such as that Scribe was of whom Christ saith, *Mark* 12. 34. that *he was not farre from the kingdome of God*; and King *Agrippa*, *Acts* 26. 28. Others there are that enter into the kingdome of God by faith and repentance, *Iohn* 3. 3. *He that is borne againe seeth the kingdome of God*, that is, *he enters into it*, as it is, verse 5. But then againe others there are, (with whom also in that respect God is very well pleased,) that do not only enter into it, but enter in a plentifull and abundant manner, as in this place. The difference betwixt these two last sorts is such, as is betwixt those that make entrance only into the borders of a countrey, and those that go even into the most inward parts of it: or as is betwixt those that make entrance only into a discipline, and those that have throughly learned, and do exercise the very mysteries thereof. This Doctrine is confirmed, *Colos.* 3. 15, 16. And to that purpose is that in *Colos.* 1. 9.

Reason 1. Because these spirituall things are such, that they can never exceed measure: there is nothing in them too much.

2. They are of such a nature, that they do whet and stirre up the desire, so that whosoever hath tasted the sweetnesse of them, doth still desire to be more and more filled with them, untill he shall come to the highest perfection, as we may see in their examples, who in this respect are most commended in Scripture.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove and condemne those, to whom the bare profession of piety seemes to be enough and too much, that feare lest they should be too godly, that is, lest they should be too happy: this is a certaine token of a carnall minde.

2. To exhort us, 1. To give God thanks, that he hath not

only admitted us into the suburbs, as it were, and gates of this kingdome, but hath also revealed unto us those things which are more inward and secret. 2. To be diligent and carefull, that we do not neglect or despise so great grace, but day by day earnestly to strive to make a greater progresse in this kingdome, which we shall do, if we be more diligent and religious in those exercises, whereby this kingdome is advanced.

Verse 12. *Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be stablished in the present truth.*

Verse 13. *Yea, I think it meet as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you up, by putting you in remembrance:*

Verse 14. *Knowing that shortly, I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.*

Verse 15. *Moreover, I will endeavour, that you may be able after my decease, to have these things alwayes in remembrance.*

The Analysis.

IN the former words the Apostle had given a reason of his exhortation, why all the faithfull should imbrace it: and in these words he gives a reason of the same, why he should use it unto them; which reason he delivers by way of anticipation, whereby he meets with a close objection by a kinde of modest excuse, or by removing the cause which they might suspect, why he should put them in remembrance of these things, namely, because he did think they were ignorant and unstable. Now he shewes that this was not the cause, in these words, *though ye know them, and be stablished in the present truth.* And then he brings divers true causes that moved him to make this exhortation unto them. 1. The great profit that would redound unto them by the performance of these duties whereunto he exhorts them. This reason is intimated in that causall particle, whereby he joynes these words with the former, *wherefore*, that is, for those benefits sake which you shall receive by this meanes, I thought it my part to put you

in

in remembrance of these things after this manner. 2. The second reason, which depends upon the former, is the desire and care that he had to further their good; this is intimated in these words, *I will not be negligent*. 3 The third reason is taken from the duty of the Apostle, because justice and equity required this of him, in these words, *I think it meet*. 4. The fourth reason is taken from the opportunity of time, which he had now, and was not long to continue; that he had it now, he shewes in these words, *as long as I am in this tabernacle*; that it was not long to continue, in these words, *Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle*, which he confirmes by the testimony of Jesus Christ. 5. The fifth reason is taken from the fruit which this exhortation might bring forth; which is set forth by the adjunct of time, that it would be profitable unto them, not only while *Peter* lived, but also after his death, *after my decease to have these things alwayes in remembrance*, verse 15.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *In our exhortations and admonitions, we must not only looke unto it, that that which we say be just and right, but also that we speak it with a right minde and good intention, and that it may so appeare also unto those with whom we have to do.*

This is gathered from the scope of this text.

Reason 1. The first reason is taken from our duty; for that which is good in it selfe, becomes evill unto us, and our duty is turned into sinne, unlesse *quod bonum est bene agamus*, we do that which is good after a good and right manner: as if a man out of anger, hatred, envie, or a desire to disgrace him, or pride, should tell his neighbour of any vice, or stirre him up to do his duty.

2. From the profit of our neighbour, or the benefit of our admonition and exhortation. For it depends oftentimes upon the mind or manner of doing it, which is chiefly looked unto in such like duties; so that they do either make way for our neighbours receiving it, or cast an obstacle in the way to hinder him from receiving it.

Use. This may serve to reprove those, that never exhort others but for revenge sake, when there is some contention and strife betwixt them; and then they please themselves most

in reprooving other mens vices, when they should not, and when they should, they are altogether silent.

Doct. 2. *We must put our neighbours in remembrance of those things which make most for their good.*

This is gathered from that particle, *Wherefore.*

Reason. Because admonition and exhortation are according to their nature, workes of charity, and tend unto the good of our neighbour: therefore we should use it most unto those from whom we may expect most good.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, who, if their neighbours do any thing unseemely or uncivilly, or to the losse of their honour, or some outward profit, do presently take notice of it in them; but never looke after those things that doe most pertaine to the kingdome of God: those things indeed should not be neglected, but these things should chiefly be looked after.

2. To exhort us, in those things which pertaine to the kingdome of God, and the salvation of soules, to have an especiall care of our duty towards our neighbour. Hitherto belongs that which *Peter* saith, *that he would not be negligent*, that is, that he would never lay aside the care of these things: which although it did in a speciall manner pertaine to the duty of *Peter*, an Apostle, and other Ministers of the word, yet it is proportionably to be extended to the common duty of all Christians, because the reasons which strengthen it, are for the most part common.

Doct. 3. *In justice and equity we are bound to put one another in remembrance.*

This is gathered from these words, *I think it meet*: for although it doth not pertain unto that particular justice, which consists in the equality of the thing received and repayed, yet it is called justice, because it hath as strong an obligation, as any thing that is due by justice, *Rom.* 1. 14.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those that account it a sinne to be negligent in paying debts, but make no account of the neglect of this duty.

Doct. 4. *They that are learned and also stablished in the truth, do yet stand in need of admonitions and exhortations.*

This is gathered from these words, *though ye know them and be stablished in the present truth.* *Reason* 1.

Reason 1. Because they are not so learned and stablished, but that they may be yet farther instructed and stablished.

2. Because if they had all knowledge and also faith, yet their will and affections must be by these meanes stirred up unto their duty. For our will is like unto a slow and dull servant, to whom it is not enough once to heare the commands of his master, but they must be often told him. Then againe, if they had not only all knowledge and faith, but also a most ready will and affections, yet because they are continually assaulted by temptations, they have need on the other side of continuall remembrances and puttings in mind, to strengthen them. The speech of the Captaine and the sound of the Trumpet, and such like excitements, do put some courage even into the most valiant souldiers.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove the pride of those men, that put such confidence in themselves in their own knowledge and faith, that they do utterly contemne such kinde of helpes.

2. To exhort all to be constant and diligent in the hearing of Sermons. For if there be any that abound in knowledge, and perhaps exceed the Preacher himselfe, so that they cannot be taught any more by him, yet they may be stirred up by admonitions and exhortations, and in that respect they should alwayes be present there; but much more should they, that are not yet learned and stablished in the truth.

3. To direct, as well the Preachers as the hearers, not only to teach the truth, but also to bring a word of exhortation alwayes, that is, to apply it to the use of the truth which they deliver, and then the hearers, to come unto Sermons, not as being greedy of novelty or speculation, but being prepared before hand and ready to receive exhortations and admonitions, and to turne them into practise.

Doct. 5. *We must take hold of the opportunity of time, which we have, diligently to exercise such Christian duties.*

This is gathered from these words, *As long as I am in this tabernacle.* So *Gal.* 6.10. *John* 9.4. & 12.35.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to deferre or put off the time of our repentance and obedience, 2 *Cor.* 6.2. *Psal.* 95.7, 8.

Doct.

Doct. 6. *The neerer we come to the end of our life, the more diligent should we be in Christian duties.*

This is gathered from the words following, *Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle.*

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, alwayes to be diligent, for as much as we are never farre from putting off this our tabernacle; for although we are not expresly told, as *Peter* was, how soone this shall be, yet we are told that it shall not be long; and it may happen sooner unto us, then it did unto *Peter*, who wrote this Epistle.

Doct. 7. *We should labour in our life, that some fruit of our life may remaine in the Church after our death.*

This is gathered from verse 15. We cannot all profit the Church by our writings, as *Peter* did, but yet through Gods grace we may either by some other workes, or at least by our good example leave some sweet smelling savour behinde us, that may be pleasing and acceptable unto those that remaine.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that live so corruptly and wickedly, that even after their death they are a scandall and offence unto those that knew them.

2. To exhort us, (and to comfort our selves in it,) to carry and behave our selves piously and holily while we live, because Gods glory is thereby advanced, not only while we live, but also after our decease.

Verse 16. *For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made knowne unto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his Majesty.*

Verse 17. *For he received from God the Father, honour, and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.*

Verse 18. *And this voice which came from heaven, we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.*

The

The Analysis.

IN these verses is contained the reason and cause of those things, which he had spoken of before, as it is manifest by the causall particle *For*. Now he had said before, 1. That all the faithfull must adde vertue unto faith. 2. That he had a just reason why he should so seriously stirre them up unto this duty; and in these words he shewes the reason and cause of both, which is taken from the certainty that is in the things themselves, and the assurance that all the faithfull may have of those things that were proposed unto them to beleeve. The certainty is set forth first by something unlike it, that is, by *cunningly devised fables*. Secondly, by the testimonies of the Apostles, who were both eye-witnesses, and eare-witnesses of these things. Eye-witnesses, in these words, *we were eye-witnesses of his Majesty*. Eare-witnesses in these words, *and this voice we have heard*. The sight and hearing of the Apostles, wherein lies the foundation of the testimony, are set forth first by their objects: The object of their sight was the majestie of Christ, the object of their hearing was a voice which came from Heaven concerning Christ. Secondly, by the cause, which was God the Father, communicating glory unto Christ both by word and deed, Verse 17. Thirdly, by the circumstances of time and place, *When we were with him, &c.*

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Cunningly devised fables are sometimes proposed in the Church in steed of the truth of God.*

For this is the reason why the Apostle cleares himselfe from all suspicion of such like fables, because there were many at that time, and many would come afterwards, that would deceive the Church with such like fables, 1 *Cor.* 2. 1. Where *Paul* saith, that *he came not with excellency of speech*, thereby closely rebuking some false Apostles and Preachers, who did affect nothing else, but a shew of eloquence. So in this place *Peter* makes mention of fables, by reason of such impostors, 1 *Tim.* 1. 4. & 6. 4. *Tit.* 1. 14. Such were the fables in the Church of *Rome*, that are contained in their golden Legends of S. *Francis*, *Dominick*, and innumerable Saints and Virgins,

with

with the miracles that were done by them. For such like fables were wont to be heretofore, and yet to this day also in many places are proposed unto the people in stead of the word of God.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to receive all things that are proposed, without triall and examination: for so we may imbrace fables in steed of the Gospell.

2. To exhort us, to give God thanks, that we live in those Churches, out of which all such old wives fables are wholly removed, and wherein nothing is proposed but the sincere word of God.

Doct. 2. *All those professors of the faith that do not adde vertue unto faith; and all those Preachers that do not with zeale and constancy stirre up the faithfull to labour for vertue, do greatly dishonour the Gospell, as if it were of the same nature with cunningly devised fables.*

This is gathered from the connexion of these words with the words foregoing, which were explained in the Analysis. For this is the force of the Apostles reason; If I did account the truth of the Gospell like unto a cunningly devised fable, I could not so earnestly, and with such constancy stir you up to imbrace and adorne it; nor could ye receive those things that we have spoken of, without an endeavour to abound in vertue, if ye did not account them like unto cunningly devised fables.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish, 1. All Preachers to beware of carelessenesse and negligence in stirring up the people unto piety. And 2, All the faithfull also to beware of luke-warme and unfruitfull profession of the faith. For neither of them can be without an implicit and vertuall blasphemy. And they that so carry themselves, although they do not in words; yet they do in their deeds confesse, and make it to appeare, that they make no more account of the Gospell, then of an old wives fable.

2. To exhort us, to give all diligence to sanctify, as it were, the Gospell of Christ which we professe, and to shew it in our lives, that we think farre otherwise of the nature of it, then the profane multitude doth.

Doct. 3. *The summe of the Gospell consists in declaring the power and comming of Christ.*

This

This is gathered from these words, *We made known unto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.* For his power hath respect unto his divine nature, together with the effects thereof, *Rom.* 1.4. And his comming hath respect unto his humane nature, together with the end and benefit of his incarnation. Now if these two be joyned together, namely, that Christ came to save us, and that he came with power, so that he had all sufficiency & efficacy at his comming, nothing more can be desired to comfort the faithfull.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish, 1 Preachers, to make the power and comming of Christ the center as it were of all their Sermons. The Apostle, 1 *Cor.* 2.2. *Determined to know nothing save Iesus Christ and him crucified,* & then also, 2. the hearers, to have a speciall eye unto that in the hearing of Sermons, how they may profit in the understanding of this mystery.

2. To exhort us, to fetch all the obedience which we performe unto God, from him as from the fountaine. For whatsoever duties flow not from the power and comming of Christ, are not Evangelicall, but are infected with hypocrisie, or consist in civility.

Doct. 4. *The certainty of this Gospell, even as it may be had after the manner of men, is as great as any we can have of any things that are done and past.*

This is gathered from these words; *We have seene, we have heard.* For it is confirmed by the testimony of those, that sensibly perceived it; who by the confession of all were men at least worthy to be believed, having no reason to witnesse any otherwise then the thing it selfe was; in regard that they could not expect to receive any profit thereby from men; and being such as confirmed it unto us, not by the bare testimony of their words, but also with their life and blood: so that even after the manner of men we may be as certaine of the Gospell as we are, that there was sometimes a Monarchy of the Assyrians, Grecians, Romans: that there were Captaines, and Knights, of such and such a countrey, or the like.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove and condemne the perverse sse of men, who easily believe all other things, though there be but weak arguments to confirme it; but they can scarce be brought to receive the Gospell of salvation.

2. To exhort us to strengthen our faith with such like reasons, even to the full assurance thereof, 1 *John* 1.3,4. For although we our selves have not seene these things, yet we must as strongly and firmely believe them, as if we our selves had seene them with our eyes, *Joha* 20.29. This pertaines unto the thankfulnesse which we owe unto God, that he would not barely declare unto us his will, but also confirme it by testimonies, *Luke* 1.2. For this was one of the speciall offices of the Apostles, to witnesse those things which they had seene of Christ, *Acts* 1.22. & 2 32.

Doct. 5. *A great Majesty was sensibly perceived by the Apostles.*

This is gathered from these words, *We have seene his Majestie.* So great was this Majestie, that the Disciples could not beare it, *Matth.17 6.* It astonished and amazed *Peter*, *Marke* 9. 6.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, to conceive by this proofe, how great the glory and Majestie of Christ is now in Heaven, how great it shall be at the last day, and how great we also shall be made in the life to come.

2. To exhort us, to have Christ in high estimation: We have no cause to be ashamed of so great a Majestie; according to that of our Saviour; *If any one be ashamed of me in this adulterous generation, him will I be ashamed of before God and his Angels.*

Doct. 6. *This majestie was expressed in those words of God,* This is my beloved Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

In these words is contained both the power and comming of Christ, whereof the Apostles witnessed, and wherein is contained the summe of the Gospell, as we said before. This is gathered from the connexion of the words, which these have with the former, *We made knowne, &c.* For in the title of *Sonne* is declared the honour and glory of Christ, where he is called *this my Sonne*: in the title of *beloved* is shewed the comming of Christ, and the end thereof, namely, to reconcile us unto God, and make us beloved of him: whence he is called, *My beloved in whom I am well pleased.* By the title of *Sonne* is chiefly signified the kingdome of Christ, by the title of *beloved in whom I am well pleased,* is signified the Priesthood

hood of Christ; and by the third thing which is added, *Mat.* 17.5. is signified his Prophetical office: *heare ye him.* And that which is there expressed, is here understood; so that there is nothing in Christ and the Gospell which may not fitly be reduced to these few words.

Use 1. This may serve to instruct us, for the building up of our faith, to have alwayes in our mindes that divine voice; for therefore came it twice from Heaven, once in the Baptisme of Christ, and once in this transfiguration which *Peter* hath reference unto in this place: All the word of God indeed comes from him, but there are some parts of it which come from him unto men in a more speciall manner, that is, immediately. Such was the Decalogue in the Old Testament: such was the voice, *Iohn* 12. 28. and such was this voice that was twice repeated: Now as we should magnifie every word of God, so in a speciall manner should we observe and take notice of such words as these.

2. To admonish us, to depend upon Christ alone, and to have recourse unto him only, in those things which pertaine unto our salvation. 1. Because such a testimony was never given of any one besides Christ. 2. In this testimony, power, honour, and glory is so given unto Christ, that it is denied unto all others: for the demonstrative particle *that*, as it is in the originall, οὗτός ὁ ἀγαπητός, hath an exclusive vertue, as touching all others, excluding all others from being partakers of it.

Doct. 7. *This voice of God did effectually bring honour and glory unto Christ.*

This is gathered from these words, *He received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice unto him.*

Reason 1. Because the testimony of God is infallibly true. 2. There is joyned with it omnipotent power, when it is said to come from the excellent glory.

Use 1. This may serve to instruct us, by faith to relye upon every testimony of God. For that which God promiseth or any way witnesseth, is as sure as that which we have already received or do see brought to passe. We may oftentimes doubt of mens words, because they have neither perfect truth, nor

perfect power: but the excellent glory of God, whereof mention is here made, requires far otherwise of us.

2. To exhort us, for the confirmation of our faith, to have alwayes in our eyes the excellent glory of God, whereby he can and also will do whatsoever he hath said.

Doct. 8. *Those things which pertaine unto the kingdome of Christ, are so holy, that they make the place it selfe, wherein they are declared, in some sort holy.*

This is gathered from these words: *in the holy Mount.* For this Mount was not holy, but by this transfiguration, and this voice that came from heaven, *Exod.* 3. 5. *Iohn* 6. 3.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove the stupidity of those, that are nothing taken with such things as these that are so holy.

2. To exhort us, reverently and religiously to prepare our selves, and apply our mindes unto holy exercises, *Eccles.* 5. 1.

Verse 19. *We have also a more sure word of prophesie; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, untill the day dawne, and the day-starre arise in your hearts.*

Verse 20. *Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the Scripture is of any private interpretation:*

Verse 21. *For the prophesie came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.*

The Analysis.

PEter had before proved the certainty of the Gospell by the testimony of the Apostles, who were eye-witnesses and eare-witnesses of it; now he proves the same certainty by the testimony of the word of prophesie; which he sets forth, 1. By the adjunct of stability, and that in comparison to the testimony of the Apostles, in respect whereof this word of prophesie is said to be more sure. 2. By the duty adjoyned which is due unto this word of prophesie, namely, a religious heed and attention which should be given unto this word. Wch attention is declared, 1. By the end and use of this word of prophesie, which is by way of comparison set forth by the use of a light, 2. by the helping cause, 3. By the esteeme

which

which we should have of the Prophesie of Scripture, verse 20, 21. namely, that it is by the instinct of the Holy Ghost; which is set forth by those Prophesies that are contrary thereunto, namely, such, as are of private interpretation, or by the will of man. By prophesie is meant, not the foretelling of those things, that depend upon any naturall causes, (for so the Astrologers and Physitians can foretell many things, being skilfull in the naturall causes,) nor of those things that depend upon the will of any creature (for so those that know other mens counsell, may foretell many things probably at least) but prophesie is a fore-telling of those things, that depend only upon the will of God, and can be knowne by God alone, and those to whom he hath revealed it. By the word of Prophesie is meant the Prophesie of holy Scripture, as it is expresly set downe, verse 20. which is distinguished in this respect not only from false prophesies, but also from other true ones, which were never in the Canon of the Scripture.

The Doctrines rising herehence.

Doct. 1. *The word of Prophesie is a more sure testimony then the testimony of any men, or of those things that our senses themselves can give us.*

This is gathered from the comparison which is here made betwixt this testimony and that which went before. But it is said to be more sure, not more true: because that which the Apostles witnessed, was as true; but their testimony did not carry with it so great a confirmation of the truth.

Reason 1. Because it appeared not so much to be a divine testimony, being not as yet expressed in the Scriptures.

2. Because it could not prevaile so much upon the mindes of the Jewes, as the word of prophesie, which had now for many ages bin as it were habitually confirmed in their minds.

3. Because the testimony of one that foresaw the truth, hath more divine operation in it, then the testimony of him that witnesseth what he hath seen or heard being present, *Ioh.* 5. 36, 39. There are three degrees of testimonies, 1 Of *Iohn.* 2. Of the workes of Christ. 3. Of the Scripture or word of prophesie. The testimony of works is said to be greater then the testimony of *Iohn*, and the testimony of the Scripture by way of gradation is intimated to be greater then both.

Vse 1.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, in all those things that pertaine unto faith and our salvation to depend only upon the Scriptures, because nothing can be more sure.

2. To exhort us, to give God thankes, that he hath not only made knowne unto us his truth, but hath also confirmed it by strong and sure reasons, and in all respects hath had regard to and provided for the weakenesse of our faith.

3. To reprove many Christians, which do too much stagger and doubt of these truths. For there appeares such a wavering and doubting of the minde, where the life is doubtfull and uncertaine, and is not surely grounded and ordered according to the rules of Christ. Now we should be as sure of these matters of faith by the Scriptures, as we are of those things that we our selves see now present before our eyes; and go on as firmely and constantly in the way of Christ, as if we did now with our eyes see Christ himself, and all those things that he hath promised us; or as if we did now heare that voice, *Arise ye dead and come to judgement.*

Doct. 2. *The prophesie of the Old Testament gives a most sure testimony of the power and comming of Christ.*

This is gathered from the reference which this 19 verse hath to verse 16. So *Luke* 1.20. *Acts* 3.18,24. & 10.43.

Reason. 1. The greatnesse of this mystery, which was such, that it must not be shewed on a sudden to the world, but, for dignity sake, as it were, by such like messengers going before.

2. That it might the more appeare that these things come from God, who was the only author of such like prophesies.

3. Because the salvation of the people of God from the beginning of the world depended upon the beleeving of this mysterie.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, to confirme our faith more and more by such like arguments.

2. To exhort us, highly to esteeme of this mysterie, because God himselfe alwayes made such reckoning of it, that he would have his Prophets from the beginning of the world to be exercised in the declaration of it.

3. To admonish us, that it should never seeme tedious unto us, to heare and meditate upon those things, which pertain

unto

unto this mysterie, seeing God would have this alwayes pressed by all his Prophets.

Doct. 3. *It is most praise-worthy in Christians alwayes to give diligent heed unto the Prophesies and the rest of the Scripture.*

This is gathered from these words: *Ye do well that ye take heed.* By *taking heed* is meant, 1. A search and inquiry after the sense of the Scriptures, or the truths that are contained in them. 2. An applying of those truths unto the ends and uses whereunto they serve. 3. A religious affection of the minde, whereby the conscience is subdued unto those truths as unto the rules of faith and manners: now they do well, that do thus give heed unto the Scriptures.

Reason 1. Because this obedience pleaseth God.

2. Because they provide well for themselves, to be directed unto eternall happinesse.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute the Papists, and some other foolish men, who deny that they do well, which give heed unto the Scriptures.

2. To reprove all profane and worldly men, who take great care about their worldly profits, or their carnall pleasures, but give little or no heed at all unto the Scriptures.

3. To exhort us, to stirre up in our selves daily this care of attention.

Doct. 4. *The Scripture is a light shining unto those that religiously give heed unto it.*

This is gathered from these words, *Take heed as unto a light that shineth.* Now it is called a light,

Reason 1. Because it is cleare and manifest in it selfe.

2. Because it makes all other things cleare and manifest.

3. Because it enlightens also the eyes of our minde, so that we are able to behold the heavenly mysteries of the kingdome of God.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute the Papists, who tax the Scriptures of obscurity.

2. To reprove and condemne those, that walk in the midst of this light, and yet perceive no more of the things of God, then as if they were in darknesse.

3. To exhort us, 1. To give God thanks for so great a benefit. For God now deales with us, as he did heretofore with the

the Israelites, in whose dwellings there was light, when in all the land of the Egyptians there was thick darkness, *Exod.* 10.22.23. 2. To walke in this light, not to sleepe or have fellowship with the workes of darkness, as it is *Ephesians* 5. 8. 11.14.

Doct. 5. *The whole condition of this our life hath much darkness in it.*

This is gathered from these words; *A light shining in a darke place.* We may see the explication of these words in *Calvin.*

Reason. Because without the light of the Scriptures and faith we are nothing but darkness; seeing therefore this light is communicated unto us but imperfectly in this life, there must needs be as yet much darkness.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to puffe up our selves with the opinion of knowledge, but humbly to acknowledge our imperfections.

2. To exhort us, so much the more diligently to give heed unto the light.

Doct. 6. *We must give heed unto the Scriptures, untill a greater light be communicated unto us, then we can have out of the Scriptures, that is, untill the last end of this life.*

This is gathered from these words, *untill the day dawne.* Although they were very strongly confirmed, verse 12. Yet they must still give heed unto the Scriptures. *Daniel* himselfe, though a Prophet, gave heed unto the Propheties of *Ieremy, Daniel*, 9. 2. *Peter* himselfe gave heed unto the Epistles of *Paul*, c. 3. v. 15. *Paul* himselfe had great care of the Parchments, that is, of the volumes and books of Scripture, 2 *Tim.* 4. 13.

Use 1. This may serve to refute the Anabaptists, who say that the Scriptures are only profitable for novices and young beginners, and not for the stronger.

2. To reprove those, that rest in that knowledge of the Scriptures, which they have, and seeke no farther.

Doct. 7. *Very great knowledge, light and clearenesse shall be communicated unto us in the life to come.*

This is gathered from the comparison that is made betwixt the life present and the life to come: In the present we have

a light as it were in a darke place, but in that to come we shall have full noone as it were, 1 *Cor.* 13. 12.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us earnestly to desire to come unto that perfection, and in the meane time to exercise our selves in those things that lead thereunto.

Doct. 8. *The light of the Scripture profiteth none but the faithfull.*

This is gathered from these words: *Knowing this first*, that is, beleeving, *Hebr.* 4. 2. No great or noble effect is produced, unlesse the matter, or the object wherein it should be produced, be prepared before: the seed it selfe that is cast into the ground, doth not grow, unlesse the ground be plowed and harrowed. Besides, whereas the Scripture is a testimony, and the strength of the testimony depends upon the authority of him that witnesseth; the Scripture can be of no force, if the authority of God be not acknowledged in it.

Vse. This may serve to direct us, when we come to the reading or hearing of the Scriptures, alwayes to lift up our mindes unto God, and stirre up true faith in our hearts.

Doct. 9. *The first thing to be believed is, that the Scriptures are not of any inhumane interpretation, but of divine revelation.*

This is gathered from these words: *Knowing this first, &c.*

The Papists and some others gather from this place, that the interpretation of Scripture doth not belong unto private men, but unto the Church, that is, the *Pope* and the Councels whom he approves of: but in this sense this place makes most against them: for first it is not here said that a private man may not interpret the Scriptures, but that he may not make an interpretation of his owne; now by a mans owne interpretation is meant a humane interpretation, that is made by the will of man; as it evidently appeares by the opposition, verse 21. So that the Prophets themselves, although they were publick Doctors of the Church, yet if they should have said any thing of themselves without the revelation of God, that would have beene their owne, that is, a humane interpretation: whence also it followes that every interpretation of the *Pope*, which he takes not from cleare Scripture, or hath it not by some extraordinary revelation, is his owne in that sense as this word is taken in this place. Secondly, By *inter-*

pretation in this place is not meant the interpretation of Scripture, that was before revealed, but the revelation it self, as it appears by the 21 vers. where this interpretation is made to consist therein, that the Prophets spake their propheſies as they were moved by the holy Ghost. 3 *Peter* himself, who in the opinion of the Papists was at that time head of the Church, bids the faithfull here, search the Scriptures, he doth not bid them depend upon him, and alwayes look for interpretation. 4 He attributes more and greater strength unto the Scripture, then to his own testimony. 5 He cals the Scripture a light, and the condition of the Church a dark place: the Papists on the contrary attribute darkneſſe unto the Scripture, and light and clearneſſe unto the Church. 6 He commends the vulgar sort of the faithfull, that they did take heed unto the Scriptures, in these words, *Ye do well.* But the Papists by this interpretaion debarre the faithfull from the reading of the Scripture.

Use 1. This may serve to refute the Papists, that put the Church before the Scripture, and say that the first thing to be believed is, that the Church cannot erre.

2. To exhort us, to lay this foundation firme and sure in our hearts.

Doct. 10. *The holy Ghost moved those men that were authors of the Scriptures.*

This is gathered from these words: *As they were moved by the holy Ghost.*

Use. This may serve to instruct us, by continuall prayer to seek for the aid of the Spirit, for the understanding of the Scriptures. The Scripture must be understood by the help of the same Spirit, by whom it was dictated, as *Hier. Eodem spiritu debet intelligi Scriptura, quo fuit dictata.*

Doct. 11. *The men which the holy Ghost made use of, to deliver the Scriptures, were holy men of God.*

Holy, because they were sanctified inwardly, & also set apart to this most holy work. *Men of God* they were, because they were called by God to this office, and they did declare the will of God, and they did labour also to bring men unto God.

Use. This may serve to exhort us, to labour to be like unto them, according to our ability, both in holineſſe, and in zeale of the Lord.

Chap.

Chapter II.

Verse 1. *But there were false Prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.*

Verse 2. *And many shall follow their pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evill spoken of.*

Verse 3. *And through covetousnesse shall they with feined words make merchandize of you.*

The Analysis.

Hitherto the Apostle propounded an exhortation, and confirmed it also in the foregoing Chapter. In the two following Chapters he strengthens it, by removing the impediments, that might make this exhortation of no effect. And the chiefe impediments are *false teachers* and *profane scoffers*: of these former he speaks Ch. 2. Of the latter chap. 3.. The false teachers he doth first, describe: secondly, reprove: he describes them from the beginning to those words in vers. 3. *whose judgement, &c.* Then he reproves them, 1 in generall in these words, *that they are damned men*; which he doth afterwards prove, 1 by the usuall course of Gods justice, from verse 4. to the 10. 2. By their deserts, whereby they bring upon themselves the revenging justice of God, from verse 10. to the end of the Chapter. In the description of the false teachers he makes, 1 A comparison of the like betwixt the false teachers and those that were false prophets among the people of Israel, partly that he might joyne together this discourse with the former, where he spake of true Prophets; and partly that he might meet with the scandall which might arise by such seducers; and partly

that he might stirre up the faithfull so much the more, to beware of their seducing. In the first respect, the last words of the former Chapter, and the first of this Chapter, make such a *discreet axiom* as this; although there were many Prophets among the People of Israel, that were holy men of God, and were moved by the Spirit of God in those things that they spake; yet among the same people also there were many false Prophets. This *discretion* is shewed in these words: *But there were.* In the second respect these words make a *copulate axiom* thus: Like as there were false Prophets among the People of Israel, so also shall there be false teachers among you. In the third respect there is intimated and implicitely contained such a *connex axiom* as this: If there shall be false teachers among you, like as there were false Prophets among the people of Israel, then must you be alike careful to beware of these, as the Israelites were warned heretofore to beware of them. After that description which is made by way of comparison, followes an absolute description; wherein the false teachers are described by their effects. Which effects have either an immediate reference unto the false teachers themselves, or unto others by them. Those that have reference unto the false teachers themselves, are 1 The bringing in of heresies, which are set forth by their adjunct, that they are damnable, whereof he gives a reason also, taken from the nature of heresies, which is said to be such, that *it brings in a denying of the Lord.* 2. The second effect is, that *they bring upon themselves swift destruction.* In respect of others the first effect is, that *they shall have many followers*, who are pointed out by another effect accompanying this seducing, namely, *a speaking evill of the truth, or of the Gospell, which shall come to passe by their meanes.* The other effect is the abuse of those whom they do seduce for gain, which abuse is set forth by the helping cause, namely *by fained words.*

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *There are alwayes false prophets and false teachers in the Church.*

This is gathered from these words: *there were, there shall bee.*

Reason. This comes to passe in a threefold respect, 1 in re-

spect

spect of God. 2. In respect of the Devill. 3. In respect of men. First, in respect of God, and that 1 that they which are approved in the Church may be made manifest, 1 *Cor.* 11. 19. *Deut.* 13. 3. 2. That the obstinate wicked may perish in their ungodlinesse and cruelty, 2 *Thess.* 2. 10, 11, 12. 1 *Kings* 22. 20, 21, 22. Secondly, in respect of the Devill, because he is alwayes the father of lyes, and a murtherer, and that envious one, which soweth tares among the good seed. *Thirdly*, In respect of men, because the wisdome of the flesh is enmity against God and his truth.

The use hereof according to the Apostles intention is twofold:

Vse 1. To admonish us, not to be offended, nor to be too much troubled in minde, when we see heresies to arise in the Church, but to say as the Apostle did, *There were, there shall be.*

2. To instruct us, not to believe every spirit, but to try whether they are of God, 1 *John* 4.1.

Doct. 2. *Every heresie hath damnation joyned with it.*

This is gathered from these words: *damnable heresies.* Some are more damnable then others, yet all do in their nature tend to damnation. For all are contrary unto the way of truth, whereof mention is made, verse 2. which way alone leads unto life. But there are some heresies which can by no meanes consist with salvation or eternall life. Hereupon such opinions are by a kind of appropriation called heresies in the Church, that is, opinions altogether damnable. For there is a difference to be observed betwixt things rashly spoken, bare errors in faith, and heresies properly so called. In the heresies themselves also we must distinguish betwixt the materiality, and the formality of it. For to make a formall heresie, for which a man is properly called an heretick, there is required besides an errour in those things that pertaine unto the fundamentals of religion, a reluctation against the cleare light, and obstinacy in that reluctation.

Vse. This may serve to condemne those that under the name of peace and charity, make so little reckoning of the bringing in of heresies into the Church. They would have all things received in and tollerated; which is all one, as if they would

for

for peace and charity admit of damnation it selfe. For heresies have damnation joyned with it.

2. To admonish us, 1. to take diligent heed that we do not by any means further such heresies. 2. Not rashly or for a light cause to pronounce any man an heretick. 3. As carefully to beware of heresies, as we should of damnation.

Quest. In the reason which is here given of this property of heresies, that they are damnable, a question is moved, What is meant by denying the Lord? *denying the Lord that bought them.* For many gather from this place, that all and every particular man were redeemed by Christ, because it is here said that he bought even those wicked hereticks: but it may be answered divers wayes.

Answ. 1. That these false teachers were members of the visible Church, and therefore, 1. they accounted themselves such as were redeemed by Christ, and made shew of that profession. 2. Men were to account them such, as long as they continued in the Church; and in this respect they may be said to be such as were redeemed by Christ; like as the Apostles are wont to call whole Churches justified, sanctified, and elect. There is not the same reason therefore of all and every particular man, as there was of these.

Ans. 2. He doth not here speak of Christ properly, as he is Redeemer, nor of the redemption of his blood, but of that right, whereby masters chalenge their servants, as having bought them; which may be thus shewed: 1. Here is no mention of Christ as being Lord properly, but Master. For in the Greek it is δεσπότης, which is properly, a Master in respect of a servant, not κύριος, Lord. And these two names are clearly distinguished, *Jude* v. 4. where the same thing is spoken of the same false teachers: there they are said to deny their *Dominum & herum*, Lord and master; although he may be called their *Herus*, *Master*, he is not properly called their *Dominus*, *Lord*. Then againe, the Lord is not said to have redeemed all men, but only to have bought them: now although the word ἀγοράζειν, to buy, be sometimes used in the same sense that the other is, yet it is not alwayes so.

Ans. 3. The comparison here is plainly made betwixt the false teachers and the false Prophets, betwixt the visible Church

Church and the people of Israel; for the Lord is said to have bought those men in the same sense, that he is said to have redeemed and delivered all the people of Israel; that is, as he delivered them out of Egypt, and challenged them to himselfe in a peculiar manner, that by a solemne covenant they should be his servants; so also all those that give their names unto the Church, he may in this respect be said to have bought, as a Master, that they should serve him for ever. To deny the Lord is, not to acknowledge God or Christ for the Lord, *Matth.* 10. 32, 33. to confesse and to deny are made contrary one to another, *Luke* 12. 8, 9. The reason is, because it hath once professed the name of the Lord, and afterwards departs from that profession, it is all one as if he did plainly say, that he would no longer be a servant of that Lord. For this denying is twofold, either verball or reall. A verball denying was in *Peter*, a reall denying is in all those that after they have made profession of the faith, return unto a profane life, 1 *Tim.* 5. 8. 2 *Tim.* 3. 5. The denying in this place is properly meant of a reall denying. For the description of these men doth rather expresse their profane course, then their open renouncing of Christ.

Doct. 3. *It is a damnable impiety to deny Christ either in word or deed.*

Reason 1. Because by this means Christ is greatly dishonoured; for men, our lusts, and Sathan himselfe are preferred before him, *Mark* 8. 38. where the indignity of this sinne is shewed, that an adulterous and sinfull generation is preferred before Christ. Christ also by this means is accused of iniquity: for no servant usually goeth away from his master, if he confesseth him to be a just master; therefore this going away is as it were a professing that he doth accuse that master from whom he goes of some iniquity. Hereupon was that contesting of the Lord against his rebellious people, that he was a just and right master, neither did he give them any cause to depart from him, *Ier.* 2 5. *Mich.* 6. 3. *Deut*, 32. 4.

2. Because Christ threatned a most heavie judgement against this sin, when he saith that he will deny those men; that he wil be ashamed of them before God and his Angels, *Mark* 8. 38.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne, not only the manifest Apostates, but also all those, that with the profession of godlinesse

godlinesse joyne a profane life, or turn aside from that profession. The sinne of these men is more grievous, then of Turks and Infidels, that never gave their names unto Christ; for the neerer any man commeth unto God, the more doth he dishonour his name, if he doth fall back againe. He that hath in some sort forsaken Sathan, and given himselfe up unto God, and afterward forsakes God again, and gives himselfe up unto Sathan, seems to have known both masters, and advisedly to pronounce that he is the better, whose servant he would rather be, that is, Sathan.

2. To admonish us, 1. Carefully to beware, not only of the damnable sin it selfe, but also of all appearance, and every degree of it, and every occasion that might leade us thereunto. 2. If in any respect we have turned towards such like abomination, to recall our selves betimes, and seriously to bewaile our offence, like as *Peter* did after his denying of Christ, *Matth.*26.75.

Doct. 4. *It is the nature of such sinnes to bring destruction upon men.*

This is gathered from these words; *bring upon themselves destruction.*

Reason. Because sinne in respect of the guilt that is joyned with it, hath a kind of power whereby it drawes all evill; like as faith and prayers obtain every good gift from God. Hence is it, that our sins are said to cry for vengeance; and also to draw punishment unto it as it were with strong cords, *Isay* 5. 18. For while men draw sin with such-like cords, they do also draw the punishment of sinne, which is joyned unto it.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, in this respect to beware of sin.

2. To exhort us, by faith, repentance, and prayers, to turn away that destruction from us, which our sins would bring upon us.

Doct. 5. *The destruction which hangs over the heads of grievous offenders will come swiftly.*

This is gathered from these words; swift destruction.

Doct. 6. *Men are wonderfully prone to imbrace errors.*

This is gathered from these words; *And many shall follow.*

Reason.

Reason 1. By reason of that darkness, which hath taken hold of mens mindes; thereupon they may be easily drawne under any shew or glimps of light.

2. By reason of that disposition which they have, alien from the truth; thereupon they easily imbrace those things that are contrary to this truth.

3. By reason of that disposition which they have, agreeing with the nature of errors. For sinners have in themselves the seeds, of all sins, errors and heresies; so that the nature of corrupt man doth as easily receive errors, as the tinder fire.

4. By reason of the just judgement of God, whereby for the punishment of other sins they are given over to the power of errors, 2 *Thess.* 2. 10.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, to shew the corruption and wretchednesse of our nature, how hardly are we brought to imbrace the heavenly and saving truth, when we are carried headlong unto damnable errors.

2. To admonish us, that it should not be an offence unto us, if we see many given unto errors; because this was foretold us by the Apostle, and it hath a manifest reason; so that it is not to be wondred at, that many are given unto errors, but that rather, that any one doth believe the truth.

3. To exhort us, 1 Unto humiliation, in respect of this proneness unto error, 2 To care and circumspection that we be not overswayed by it. And an Argument whereby we may and should be stirred up unto this care, we have in the text, whiles they which follow heresies and hereticks, are said to follow their destruction. For not only the authors of heresies run unto destruction, but also their followers, as in the place of the *Thess.* before cited. *In those which perish*, so that it is a signe of destruction, to be seduced by hereticks.

Doct. 7. *The fruit of errors and heresies is speaking evill of the way of truth.*

This is gathered from these words, *By reason of whom the way of truth shall be evill spoken of.* By *the way of truth* is meant the Gospell, or the will of God revealed in the Scripture, which shewes the true way of salvation. It is said *to be evill spoken of*, when the dignity thereof is violated, most properly by reproachfull words. It is said to be evill spoken of *by*

them, namely, by the authors of the heresies and their followers, in a two-fold respect, 1. When they themselves speak reproachfully of it, as the Scribes and Pharisees did of Christ. 2. While they give others occasion to speak reproachfully of it, as the Jewes did unto the Gentiles, *Rom.* 2.24. both respects seeme to be meant here by these, for the Greek word διὰ signifies *per & propter*, by, and by reason of.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, to judge aright of the nature of sinne, that never staies till it hath brought men to blasphemy against God, and to speak evill of the way of God. 2. To admonish us, 1. For this cause to withstand the beginnings of sin, lest at length we be brought also to blasphemy against the holy Ghost, which Christ saith is a sin that shall never be forgiven. 2. To beware also of those men, that durst openly speak evill of the truth; amongst the number of whom they are to be put, that dare mock and scoffe at the name of predestination and the predestinate.

Doct. 8. *They which propagate errors under faire pretence, do often times seek their own gaine.*

This is gathered from these words; *through covetousnesse with fained words*: Covetousnesse is commonly the companion of heresies, oftentimes the mother, very often the Nurse of them, as we may see in the Papists.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, 1. Not to believe mens fained words. 2. To beware of covetousnesse, which is the root, as of all evils, so also of heresies.

Doct. 9. *Miserable is the condition of those men that are seduced by hereticks; for they are sold like beasts and cattell.*

This is gathered from these words, *they shall make merchandize of you.*

Verse

Verse 3. at the end. *Whose judgement now of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.*

The Analysis.

Hitherto we have seen the description of false teachers, and their sins; now followes their reproofe, or the punishment for their sins, that shall certainly befall them. This punishment is set forth, 1. Metonymically, by the cause, in that it is called judgement. 2. By the effect, in that it is called damnation. 3. By the adjunct of swiftnesse and speed, which is shewed by the negation of those things that are opposed unto swiftnesse. Now in generall, lingring or slownesse is opposed thereunto; in speciall, slumbring, which is put as a species of idlenesse or slackenesse. This swiftnesse of the punishment that shall befall them, is set forth by the adjunct of time, that it did not now first of all begin to make haste, but now of a long time.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *The punishment of sinne followes after sinne.*

This is gathered from the connexion of these words with the words foregoing: there was the description of sin; and here presently followes the threatning of punishment.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, never to think of sin, but to adjoyne also the consideration of the punishment, which is joyned unto sin.

Doct. 2. *This punishment proceeds from the just judgement of God, for that it is here called judgement.*

For God as judge of all the earth, pronounceth sentence upon men for their sins, and the execution of that sentence is called punishment. Now he pronounceth sentence according to right and a most holy law, and therefore the punishment which God inflicteth is in a proper sense called judgement.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute, 1 prophane men, which think that those evils that men suffer, both publick and private, come by chance. 2. Those that are wont to complaine of the evils which they suffer, as if God did deale unjustly with them, *Gen.*18.25. *Deut.*32.4.

2. To admonish us, continually to walke in the feare of the Lord, because we live in his sight, that exerciseth judgement.

Doct. 3. *This judgement of God brings damnation upon sinners, that is, a privation of all good, which pertaines unto the happinesse or well-being of man, and the sense of all misery; which makes that very being bitter and unpleasant.*

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, with feare to flye away from sin, and to seek the face of God.

Doct. 4. *This damnation comes swiftly upon sinners.*

Reason 1. Because it comes long before their expectation of it.

2. Because it is not deferred beyond the time which is most fit, and appointed by God, and in that respect it is said *not to linger.*

3. Because no impediment can hinder it, but it is deferred through Gods mercy and long-suffering; in that respect it is said *not to slumber*, because slumbring and sleepe bindes the mind, and hinders the actions.

4. Because now of a long time before, way is made and prepared for this damnation.

5. Because the damnation it selfe, although the wicked oftentimes are not sensible of it, yet it takes hold of them, and spiritually worketh in their minds and consciences.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that give themselves wholly unto sin, either because they think that punishment commeth slowly, or else because they hope to escape unpunished, *Eccl.* 8. 10, 11, 12.

2. To admonish us, to make haste to repent of our sinnes, not to linger nor slumber.

Doct. 5. *In all those things which pertaine unto judgement against sinners, like as in all other things, God doth nothing rashly, but foreseeth, premeditateth, and prepareth all things.*

This is gathered from the adjunct of time, *Now of a long time.* So *Iude* v. 4.

Verse

Verse 4. *For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them downe to hell, and delivered them into chaines of darkenesse to be reserved unto judgement.*

The Analysis.

NOw the Apostle proves that which he had before laid downe concerning the punishment that should befall false teachers. The conclusion of this arguing is, 1 In generall propounded of all the wicked, v. 9. For there is the consequent part of that connex axiom, the antecedent whereof begins v. 4. and is shewed by the connexion *If*, as, *If God spared not the Angels*, &c. Then afterwards in speciall, of these false teachers themselves and their followers, v. 10. In the generall conclusion, v. 9. he doth not barely set downe the condemnation of the wicked, but also by a copulate axiom joynes together with it, the deliverance of the godly from that temptation, which ariseth unto them by means of the wicked. And the reason is, because the Apostles purpose was, so to reprove the wicked, that he might in the mean time comfort the godly, and strengthen them against all the temptations, whereunto they were obnoxious by means of the wicked. In the antecedent part of this arguing he sets downe three arguments, which are as so many examples & judgements of God against the wicked; & they may make three syllogisines to prove one and the same conclusion. The first example is of the Angels that fell, v. 4. The second is of the old world, v. 5. The third is of *Sodome* and *Gomorrha*. The syllogisms are knit together, after this manner: *If God spared not the Angels, nor the old world, nor Sodome and Gomorrha; then he will not spare these false teachers, nor the like wicked men; But the former is true, by the testimony of Scripture; Therefore, &c.* These examples in respect of the generall conclusion, which is set downe, v. 9. are as *species* unto their *genus*. But in respect of the speciall conclusion which is set down, v. 10. they are as *comparata*, partly alike, partly greater. That wherein they are alike, consists therein, as God condemned those sinners, so also will he condemn these. Their inequality therein; if God spared not his most excellent creatures, the Angels, nor the old world, nor those cities; then much lesse will he spare these false teachers. The

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *The judgements of God which he hath executed from the beginning of the world were ordained to be examples for us.*

This is evidently gathered from all this arguing of the Apostle, and it is plainly taught us, verse 6. So 1 *Cor.* 10.6. they are called *types*, that is, *ensamples*; which appears also by vers. 11. which sense of the words *Beza* and others have missed.

Reason. The reason of this truth is Gods unchangeable nature and constant justice, whereby he is alwayes like himself, not only inwardly and in himselfe, but also outwardly towards us in the dispensation of his punishments and rewards, if we look to the substance of God. Hence is it, that by this argument the godly are both confirmed in their hope, *Isay* 59.1. & 9.9.10. and assured of the destruction of all their enemies, and of all those that give themselves over unto impiety.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, so to read the sacred History, not as we read profane histories and fables, either for delight, or to be informed only in the knowledge of the times, or in things that have bin done; but alwayes to observe Gods warnings and apply them unto our own use.

2. To admonish us, not to deceive our selves, as if we had a priviledge to sin above other men, or as if God wold not deale so severely with us, if we should continue in our sins, as he did heretofore with those whom he destroyed: * Other mens harmes should teach us to beware of the like sins. In the first example we have, first, The object of Gods judgement, *The Angels that sinned.* Secondly, the manner how he dealt with them, *If he spared them not.* Thirdly, the degree of this judgement, present, and to come: present, that they were adjudged unto damnation; and to come, that they were to be reserved unto judgement. The sin of the Angels is not particularly set downe in the Scriptures, because it doth not so much perraine to our edification and salvation, to know their sin, as it doth to know our own sins. But in generall we are taught, that they kept not their first estate. *Iude* v. 6. that is, they left that estate wherein God had placed them, and afterwards exercised envie, lying, murther towards men. We are taught also that the number of those that fell was great; thence it is that the Apo-

stle

stle here speaks in the plurall number. They are said to have been cast down to hell, 1. By reason of the change of their estate, because from that wonderfull high condition, which they had received by creation, they were cast downe to the lowest of all. 2. By reason of the change of their place, because from the place of blisse, where they were round about the throne of God with the other Angels, they were thrust downe into a lower place fit for sin and misery: But that this place is in the lowest parts of the earth, as the Papists would have it, it cannot be shewed out of the Scriptures, but rather the contrary: for they are said to be in the aire, and to rule there, and to go about the earth seeking to devoure men. This at least is plaine out of the Scripture, and it should suffice such as are not over-curious: 1. That they suffer a great change of estate. 2. That they are excluded from their first habitation. 3. That they are in that place, where they receive *pœnam damni & sensus*, the punishment of losse, and the punishment also of sense. They are said to be delivered into darknesse, partly in respect of sin, partly in respect of misery: for both are signified by *darknesse* in the Scriptures. They are said to be delivered into chains, by a metaphor taken from malefactors that are condemned, who are kept in prison bound with chains. Now these chains are, 1 A hardning in their sins. 2 A despaire of all deliverance. 3 A fearfull looking for that misery whereof mention is made, *Heb.*10.27. 4. The providence of God which alwayes watcheth over them, to keep and punish them. They are said to be reserved unto judgement, because they are bound so fast with these evils, that they can never escape; and yet these are but the beginnings of the evils, which they must farther undergo.

Doct. 2. *There is no dignity that can exempt a sinner from the judgement of God.*

This is gathered from the nature of the Angels.

Reason. Because dignity doth not lessen the sin, but aggravate it. For he that hath received much, owes much, and of him much is required.

Use. This may serve for admonition, that men should not trust to such staffes of reed.

Doct. 3. *That severity is due unto sin, that sinners should not be spared.* This

This is gathered from these words, *He spared not.*

Reason 1. Because sinners alwayes abuse the goodnesse of God.

2. They spare not the glory of God, but themselves.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, to ascribe it unto the grace and mercy of God, that he hath hitherto spared us.

2. To exhort us, not to contemne this long-suffering of God, but thereby to be led unto repentance, *Rom.*2.4.

Doct. 4. *By sinne a sinner is cast downe from the place and condition which he had before.*

This is gathered from these words; *cast down to hell.*

Reason. Because sin is an aversion from God. Now as the communion which we have with God, makes us to ascend into a high condition, even into Heaven it selfe, so that our conversation is in heaven, as it is *Phil.*3.20. So also aversion from him makes us to descend, even untill we come unto hell it selfe.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to trust the devill, nor our own imaginations, as if we could ever attain any good by sinning. For so our first parents were deceived, when they thought to make themselves like unto God by sin, they were made like unto the devill.

Doct. 5. *The darknesse of misery followes the darknesse of sinne.*

This gathered from these words; *delivered them into chaines of darknesse.*

Reason. Because the light is the same, whereby we are directed, and whereby we are perfected; therefore the privation of perfection and happinesse followes the privation of direction.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, alwayes to walk in the light, as children of the light, if we desire to avoid utter darknesse.

Doct. 6. *Sinners are held in sinne and in their misery, as it were with bonds.*

This is gathered from that: *Chaines.*

Reason. Because the sins themselves are the snares of the devill, 2 *Tim.*2.*last.* *Lam.*1.14. There are other reasons given of this thing in the Analysis.

Vse

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, betimes to pray for deliverance from our sins, which then we shall obtaine, when we do flye unto Christ, who gives deliverance unto the Captives; *Luke* 4.18.

Doct. 7. *The extreamest punishment of sinners is deferred unto the last judgement of God.*

Vse. This may serve for instruction, that no man should please himselfe therein, that he suffers afflictions in this world, as if therefore he should escape free in the world to come, which is the miserable comfort of some men.

Verse 5. *And spared not the old world, but saved Noah, the eighth* person, *a Preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly.*

The Analysis.

THe second and third example of Gods justice towards sinners are not barely propounded, as the first was, but are illustrated by different examples, or by examples of Gods mercy, which he shewed towards the godly, while he destroyed the wicked. The reason is, that both parts of the conclusion, which is set down, verse 9. might be fitly inferred; where the deliverance of the godly is joyned together with the destruction of the wicked. In the former of these examples is set downe, 1 The object of Gods justice, materially, *the old world*, which is more formally explained by the adjunct of impiety, whence it is called the *world of the ungodly*. 2. This justice is also illustrated by the instrument thereof, namely, *the bringing in of the flood upon the world of the ungodly*. The object of Gods mercy is made to be *Noah with his family*: who are described, 1 By their small number, wherein his family was contained, which is said to be *eight*. This *Peter* shewes, 1 *Epist.* c.3.v.20. 2 By the effect, that he was *a Preacher of righteousnesse*. For the office or duty is not here commended, but the act or exercise of this duty. For the duty was common to him with many more, but the exercise of it was proper unto himselfe.

The Doctrines arising here-hence.

Doct. 1. *The multitude of those that sinne doth not hinder Gods justice from executing his judgements upon them for their sinnes.*

This is gathered from this; *He spared not the whole world.* For as it was with dignity in the Angels, so it is also with the multitude now in the world.

Reason 1. Because the multitude doth not lessen, but rather increase the guilt of sinne, and more fill up the measure thereof, as it is in the Proverbe, *Qui peccat exemplo, bis peccat*, he that sins with example, sins twice: So he that sins with many examples, sins often times, if the thing be rightly considered. As if a man should see another fall in a slippery way, and not take the more heed unto himselfe therein, but fall into the same place and after the same manner, he is much more taxed by men, then if he had fallen alone, or first of all: so is it also in these.

2. Because the multitude which seemeth unto us a great thing, as if it could withstand Gods anger, is before God like unto water, that fals from a bucket.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to follow a multitude to do evill. And so much the more necessary is this admonition, because we are all too prone to go in the way of the multitude; which fault also we seeme to commit with some reason.

1. Because that we presume that many eyes see more then one, whence it is that the voice of the people is often taken for the voice of God.

2. Because the labour of examination seemes too difficult, and almost impossible.

3. Because that which all men do, usually goes unpunished among men, and we conceive the like thing of God.

4. Because he that doth not follow the multitude, shall gaine a multitude of enemies, and such as hate him.

But the contrary reason, which is of greater value then all those, is that of Christ, *Matth.* 7. 13. *Broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat.* To the first reason or objection we answer; that one eye of a man that seeth, perceives more, then a thousand blind eyes. The world

or

or the multitude of the world is blinded; therefore one Christian which hath the eye of his mind inlightned by the Spirit, and followes the light of Gods word, can see more then a great multitude of others. To the second we answer, that the duty of examination lies upon all and every one. And they had need to do it, not only as they are Christians, and as Christ commands them, to prove all things, and hold fast that which is good, but also as they are men: for it is not a humane, but a brutish thing to follow the multitude of those that go before, without judgement. To the third we answer, that the wayes of God are not as the wayes of men: Men winck at many, either out of ignorance, or impotency, or for feare, and the like imperfections which are not incident to God. To the fourth we answer, If God be with us, who can be against us?

Doct. 2. *The creatures which are most necessary and profitable unto us, by sin are made our enemies and hurtfull unto us.*

This is gathered from the flood of waters, that destroyed the old world. Now nothing is more necessary and profitable unto us then water.

Reason. Because the creatures are the servants and hoast of God, and therefore they depend upon his will, and pleasure, and command both for war and peace, *Hos.* 2. 18.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, so much the more to beware of sin.

2. To instruct us, if we would have any true comfort from the creatures, to lay the foundation thereof in our reconciliation with God.

Doct. 3. *God in the midst of judgement towards the ungodly, is mercifull towards the godly.*

This is gathered therehence, that when he destroyed the world, he saved *Noah*.

Reason. Because God doth not execute judgement according to the fiercenesse of his anger or fury, as men oftentimes use to do, but according to the counsell of his most perfect wisdome.

Use 1. This may serve to instruct us, not to ascribe those things unto fortune or chance, which happen unto us or others in this kind.

2. To comfort us, because in a world of all dangers and judgements, we may flye unto the mercy of God.

Doct. 4. *There are wont to be but a few godly men in the world.*

This is gathered therehence, that *Noah* is called the eighth of the godly, or rather he may be called the seventh, because *Cham* was cursed.

Reason 1. In respect of God, because he gives this grace but unto a few, that his goodnesse and mercy towards them may appeare the more abundant.

2. In respect of the second causes, and of the nature of the thing it selfe, because that which is most difficult, and of the greatest care and perfection, is not wont to be found but in few. The gifts of nature are common unto all, of art and industry to fewer, but the gifts of grace to fewest of all. There are more good Taylors, then good Physitians, and more good Physitians then good Kings. So that that hath the greatest perfection, which is given but to a few.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to be so much the more diligent to make our election and calling sure.

2. To exhort us, to give God thanks, that he hath made us partakers of that happinesse, which he grants but to a few.

Doct. 5. *All the godly, that will be made partakers of Gods mercy, must be preachers of righteousnesse, as Noah was.*

Now righteousnesse is preached not only in words, but also in deeds. For so it is wont to be said, The thing it selfe speaketh, not the tongue only, *Phil.* 2. 15, 16.

Reason. Because no man can escape the revenging justice of God, unlesse he labour to follow and advance the righteousnesse that is prescribed by him.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne and reprove those, that are rather Preachers of unrighteousnesse, then of righteousnesse.

2. To exhort us, more and more to stir up our selves to have a care of this duty.

Verse

Verse 6. *And turning the Cities of Sodome and Gomorrha into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly.*

Verse 7. *And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:*

Verse 8. *(For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day, with* their *unlawfull deeds.)*

The Analysis.

IN these verses is contained the third example, which is divided after the same manner, as the second was. For here he speaks of the judgement of God upon the wicked, and his mercy towards the godly. The object of his judgement are the Cities of *Sodome* and *Gomorrha*; the manner is, by fire, which is intimated in these words, *turned into ashes*. The degree is, in their utter overthrow; the end and use is, to warne those that should after live ungodly. For such judgements are ensamples not of a wicked life, but of the condemnation that hangs over the heads of those that live ungodly; and so they are ensamples to move men, not to do the like; but to take heed lest if they do after the like manner, they suffer also after the like manner.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. *No society of men or policy can hinder the judgement of God, which he will bring upon them for their sins.*

For as in the first example there was the dignity of the Angels, in the second the multitude of men, so also in this place society and policy; and Cities that were so noble, *Sodome* and *Gomorrha*. For they were Cities that were brought into government, they had Kings, *Gen.* 14 2. This Doctrine is propounded, and proved, *Prov.* 11.21. & in 16.5. it is repeated.

Reason. Because the guilt of sin is not lessened, but increased by means of societies, if they favour sinnes: for they pervert the end whereunto they were ordained. For whereas the end of all societies is to restraine sinne, and to advance righteousnesse, 1 *Tim.* 2.2. and they on the contrary cherish sin and impugne righteousnes, they do provoke the anger of God more, then

then if they were not such societies. The sin of these Cities is said to be grievous, and crying, *Gen.*18.20.

This may serve for admonition, that Citizens or Magistrates should not trust too much to their wealth, so that thereby they should be made the more bold to sin.

Doct. 2. *The same judgements of God are executed by contrary causes.*

This is gathered therehence, that whereas the old world was destroyed by water, those Cities were overthrowne by fire.

Vse. This may serve for admonition, that sinners should not therefore think themselves safe, because they have escaped one judgement; for when they are fartheſt off from one evil, another is ready to fal upon them, *Amos* 5.19.

Doct. 3. *Extreame judgements follow extreame sins.*

This is gathered therehence, that this was an utter overthrow, because that these Cities had filled up the measure of their sins.

Reason. The reason is taken from the proportion, that is betwixt sin and the punishment of sin.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, if we cannot altogether avoid sin, yet with feare and trembling to shun the progresse and continuance in sin.

Doct. 4. *They that are unto others examples of sin, shall be also unto them examples of punishment.*

This is gathered from these words: *Making them an ensample.*

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, so much the more to take heed, that we give no scandal unto others, or to be an example in sin.

2. To exhort us to increase in godlinesse by the examples of Gods judgements upon sinners. For that is the use and end of them, *Amos* 4.12.

The other part of the Analysis.

The object of mercy is *Lot*, who is described, 1 *By* the adjunct, that he was righteous. 2 *By* the effect, that his soule was vexed with the wickednesse of the ungodly, which is more largely set forth, v.8. 1 *By* the internall cause, which was his righteousnesse. 2 *By* the externall cause, which was their ungodlinesse.

godlinesse. 3 By the means, wherby the external cause or the object did work that effect. And they were the senses of hearing and seeing. 4 *By* the occasion, which was his dwelling amongst them. 5 *By* the adjunct of time, which was continually. 6 *By* the degree, which was the highest, as if he had beene put upon the rack; he vexed, in Greek it is ἐβασάνιζε, tormented.

Besides those that are common unto *Lot* with the example of *Noah*, there are these Doctrines to be observed.

Doct. 1. *Men are accounted righteous or unrighteous in the sight of God, not so much for some one deed, as for the whole course of their life.*

This is gathered therehence, that *Lot* is here called *righteous*, who notwithstanding is spoken of in the Scripture to have committed a most hainous sin. For those that are said to be *righteous* in the Scriptures, are so called, either in respect of the imputation of Christs righteousnesse, or in respect of some particular cause wherein they shew themselves righteous, or in respect of that inherent righteousnesse, which, though it be imperfect, yet is it sincere and pleasing unto God.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute the Papists and others, who as soone as they reade that any one is called righteous in the Scriptures, presently conclude that a man may fulfill the whole law, and stand upon his own merits before God.

2. To comfort the godly, who sometimes fall through infirmity. For if they continually labour to please God, God in mercy accounts them righteous.

Doct. 2. *There are sometimes righteous men found in the midst of the ungodly.*

This is gathered therehence, that righteous *Lot* dwelt amongst the *Sodomites*.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute those, that when they sinne put the fault upon others with whom they live, as if they could not be godly because others are wicked.

2. To exhort us, to strengthen our minds against the wickednesse of the age, and places, or men, amongst whom we live. For like as that servant deserves well of his Master, that sticks close unto him, when all others forsake him; so also are they

they most acceptable unto God, that adhere unto him, when all others not only forsake him, but also are against him; so did *Noah*, *Gen.* 6.8,9.

Doct. 3. *Those that are righteous, even whiles they live amongst the ungodly, are grieved for their impiety.*

This is gathered therehence, that *Lot vexed*, &c. So *Psal.* 119.158. *Acts* 17.16.

Reason. Because when godly men do most of all desire, and take care for to advance the glory of God and the salvation of others, they cannot but be grieved, when they see no reckoning made of either.

Use 1. This may serve to condemne those, that take delight in no company so much as in the company of the ungodly.

2. Those that are not sorry for their own sins, much lesse for others.

2. To instruct us, to judge of our selves hereby, in that conversation which we have with wicked men. For if we are thus wrought upon, when we see it, then it is a signe of a good conscience.

Verse 9. *The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished*, or *suffering punishment.*

The Analysis.

THis is the generall conclusion, the premisses whereof the former examples make up, and it is disposed in a copulate axiom, the former part whereof is of the mercy of God, and the latter of his justice. Where we may take notice of the reason of this order, which may be two-fold. 1 Because in the premisses he had spoken of mercy in the last place; therefore that the connexion might be evident, he puts it first in the Conclusion; and because he intends to speak more at large of the wicked afterwards, therefore he mentions Gods justice towards them in the last place. 2. The Apostle doth first of all conclude the mercy of God towards the godly, because it was his primary intent and purpose to comfort and strengthen

en the godly. The object of Gods mercy is the godly. The act and effect thereof is, to deliver them from temptation. The object of his justice is the wicked. The act and effect thereof is, to reserve them unto the day of judgement. Where he addes the manner how they shall be reserved, namely so, that they shall in the meane time suffer punishment. The cause and reason of these acts and effects, as well of his mercy as his justice, is the wisdome of God, or his knowledge joyned together with his will; as that first word intimates unto us, *The Lord knoweth.*

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *We have need of divers arguments to confirme our faith touching the mercy and justice of God.*

This is gathered therehence, that the Apostle was so carefull to conclude this, and by so many arguments.

Reason 1. Because faith is not, as knowledge and sense is, to have such a full and evident assurance, as excludes all manner of doubting, but it hath some obscurity in the object, and so admits of divers doubtings, which must be removed by such-like arguments.

2. The imperfection of our faith, which must be helped by these means.

3. The multitude of objections and temptations, which fight against this faith.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove the security and presumption of those, that feele no want in this kinde.

2. To admonish us, to use all diligence, and to search out all the arguments that may be, to edifie our selves in this faith.

Doct. 2. *They that are truly righteous, so that they are vessels of the mercy of God, are also godly.*

This is gathered there hence, that here they are called godly, who before in the example of *Noah* and *Lot*, were called righteous.

Reason. Because no righteousnesse can be pleasing unto God, which is not referred unto him and his honour; now this is done no other way, but by piety.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to rest or please our selves in any righteousnesse, that is separated from true piety towards God.

Doct. 3. *The sting of every evill of punishment, whereunto men are obnoxious in this life, is temptation.*

This is gathered therehence, that deliverance from temptation is here put for deliverance from all evill.

Reason. Because the afflictions or miseries of this life become hurtfull unto us only by that means, and as they are in us occasions or motives unto sin. For that is the nature of temptation, whereof mention is here made, to induce men unto sinne.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, to beware of the temptation that is in the evill, more then of the evils themselves.

2. To instruct us, to judge aright of the mercy of God towards the godly; for although they are not presently delivered from the afflictions themselves, yet if they be delivered from the temptation of them, they have great experience of Gods mercy towards them.

Doct. 4. *God doth very well know how to performe all those things that he hath either promised to the godly, or threatned to the wicked.*

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to judge of the event of these things, or of the successe of the godly or the wicked, according to those things that we see, but to referre all these things unto the knowledge and wisdome of God, resting upon the beliefe of those things which he hath promised.

Verse 10. *But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleannesse, and despise government: presumptuous are they, selfe-willed: they are not afraid to speak evill of dignities.*

The Analysis.

IN this verse is contained the particular conclusion of the former arguing: because he doth particularly apply unto the false teachers of that age, that which he had affirmed in generall of the unjust, verse 9. Therefore this particular conclusion is joyned with the generall, not by a bare *copula*, but by a gradation from the lesse to the greater, as it is intimated in that

that first word, *But chiefly*: as if he had said, that all the unjust should indeed suffer punishment, but those most certainly, and most heavily, that are such as the false teachers are here described to be. Now they are described both in generall, and in particular. In generall the effect of their wicked walking, in those words, *them that walke*. Of which effect, 1 he shewes the principall cause, which is, *the flesh*. 2 The administring, or next cause, which is *the lust of the flesh*, that is, the vicious motions and inclinations of corrupt nature: which is illustrated by the proper effect thereof, *uncleanesse*, because the motions of the flesh do spiritually defile the soules of men, so that it makes them polluted in the sight of God. The particular description is by a particular sin, which is, a contempt of lawfull authority: which sin is illustrated by its effect, that is, that they do contemptuously reproach dignities; where he shewes the manner of this effect which is adjoyned, that they do it boldly and selfe-willed.

The Doctrines arising here-hence.

Doct. 1. *Although all sinners may deservedly feare the judgement of God, yet there are some that may more certainly expect the severity of that judgement.*

This is gathered from these words; *But chiefly them.*

Reason. By reason of that proportion which is kept betwixt the sins and their punishments. Now they that may most certainly expect this severity of judgement, are such especially, as are very much given unto those sins, whereby we read in the Scriptures that men have brought upon themselves swift destruction.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, most of all to beware of those sins that do most hasten our damnation.

Doct. 2. *There is no one sin so heinous, as to walk in the wayes of a sinner.*

This is gathered from these words; *But chiefly them that walke.*

Reason 1. Because the act of sin doth not so much condemn as the habit of sin; like as on the contrary, the habit of any vertue doth much more commend a man, then any particular act, though it be of great note.

2. Because he that walks in the way of sin, addes impeni-

tency unto his sins; now impenitency doth condemne men more then any sin, because there is no way to escape the anger of God, but by repentance.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that please themselves therein, that they are not murtherers, nor adulterers, nor robbers, &c. when in the meane time they walk in the way of other sins, who do either contemne the worship of God, or neglect faith, hope, and charity, and are altogether ignorant of the like vertues.

2. To admonish us, to take heed unto our selves, by a timely and daily repentance, that we walk not in sine, though we cannot abstain from all sin. Sinners are not so much hatefull unto God, as the workers of sin, and such as walk in it.

Doct. 3. *There is in all men while they are in this world, some cause pricking and stirring them up unto sin.*

This is gathered therehence, that the flesh is here put as the beginning of all those sins, whereunto these wicked men were given. Now it is called the flesh, because it doth extend it selfe as largely as the flesh or body of man, being carnall: and so is in all and every particular man in common and without any exception. This is proved first *Gal* 5.17. *Iames* 1.14. *Mat.* 15.19. Secondly, it is confirmed also by reason and experience, because when there is no outward object or perswasion that can induce us unto sin, yet we feele such little sparks arising in our selves, that will set the whole man on fire, if they be not quenched betimes.

Vse 1. This may serve for instruction, 1 To refute their dreame, which imagine a perfection in this present life. 2 To refute the Papists, who say that concupiscence after Baptisme is not formally a sin. For that which of its own nature produceth sin, must needs have the nature of sin. For *quale effectum, talis causa*, such as the effect is, such is the cause.

2. To admonish us, diligently to beware not only of outward provocations, that might lead us into temptation, but also of our selves and our own hearts; for there lyes our greatest danger.

Doct. 4. *Sinne doth not consist only in outward words and deeds, but also in the inward lusts and affections, which are contrary unto the law of God.*

Reason 1.

Reason 1. The first reason is taken out of the places of Scripture, wherein God is called a Spirit, and is said to look most unto the Spirit and heart of man.

2. The second is taken out of those places, where sins are said to come from the heart, For sin can come fro the heart no other way, but by the means of such vicious lusts of the flesh. *Mat.* 15. 19

3. From the expresse words of God, *Gen.* 6. 5. & 8. 21.

4. The same is shewed unto us by the contraries, because the inward affections of men, that are good, are very pleasing unto God: Therefore after the like manner evill affections and desires must needs displease him. The amplification of this truth may be taken therehence, that there is no sin properly in the outward words, and deeds, but as they depend upon the inward affection of the heart. For if it were otherwise, then a man might be compelled unto sin, which is altogether untrue, and contrary to common sense.

Use. This may serve to refute and condemne those, that take little or no care at all, about their thoughts or inward affections, so that they can any way excuse their outward words and deeds. 2. To admonish us, therefore to watch over our inward affections and thoughts. For this is the property of a true Christian. Those that are out-side Christians, look only unto outward things; they that do inwardly and in heart feare God, are no lesse carefull of their inward thoughts then they are of their outward words.

Doct. 5. *Sins of this kind, like as all others also, do defile a man.*

Some sins are said in a speciall manner to defile a man, namely such, as pertain unto the unlawfull copulation of the flesh, and transgresse the tenth Commandement.

Reas. Because they do in their nature also defile the body and person of a man. But all sins do also defile the soul of man, because they leave a blemish behind them, which makes the soul of the sinner deformed, and lesse pleasing unto God, *Mat.* 15. 20. This is it which was heretofore signified in the Ceremoniall Law by all those uncleannesses, separations, washings, and purgings, which are so frequently spoken of by *Moses.* This also is that, which is intimated unto us in Baptisme.

Use 1. This may serve to condemn those, that do not only take delight in their sins, but also seeme to boast of them, as if they should glory in their own dung. 2. To

2. To admonish us, to learne hence more and more to abhorre all sin, as a most filthy and detestable thing. Besides that generall defiling which is common to all sinne, the Apostle seems here to intimate that speciall defiling, which is in wantonnesse, as it appears by v. 14. & 18. But of this we shall have a fitter opportunity to speak afterwards.

Doct. 6. *It is a most heinous sin to despise government, or the superiour lawfull power.*

This is confirmed, *Rom.* 13. 1, 2.

Reason 1. Because they which despise lawfull power, despise the ordinance of God. It is the Apostles reason in the same place. For although God hath prescribed unto men no speciall forme of government, yet he hath appointed, that there should be some certaine kind of governing, and so approves of all power, which is not contrary unto nature, or unto his revealed will.

2. Because such a contempt is against the common good, and tends to the disturbance of humane society.

3. Because it gives occasion to the overflowing of all other sins. For this is the reason why the authority of superiours is established in the first Commandement of the second Table, because if that be despised or neglected, all the other Commandements, not only of the second, but also of the first table, are quite destitute of those things that should strengthen them, as touching those means which men can use.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute the Anabaptists and those that tread in the steps of such hereticks, whiles they maintaine that the civill Magistrate is clean contrary to Christian religion.

2. To reprove those, that although they confesse the power in words, yet in their deeds resist it, nor do they respect it farther then it makes for their lusts.

Doct. 7. *The effect of contempt is, to reproach a man, and speak evill of him.*

Reason. Because reproaches and contumelies come properly from pride, whereby a man thinks himself better then another. For otherwise he could not reproach another man, but the same reproach would fall upon himselfe also. Contempt is the daughter of pride, and the mother of such nephewes.

Vse 1

Use 1. This may serve to admonish all Christians, to abstaine from reproachings and evill speakings. For there is none that dares affirme that it is lawfull for him to despise his brother.

2. To admonish us, to beware of pride and the contempt of others, if we would not break forth into such sins, that are so unworthy of a Christian man.

Quest. Here ariseth a question, Whether we may not sometimes reprove the sins of men somewhat sharply?

Answ. That this is lawfull is proved by the approved practise of the Prophets, Apostles, and of Christ himselfe also; but with these cautions. 1 That the sin which we reprove be manifest. 2 That the check be so directed, that it be done to the sin rather then to the man. 3. That there be together with it a manifestation of our charity. 4 That we be not moved unto this vehemency chiefly by our own private injuries, but by the zeale that we beare unto the glory of God and the salvation of others.

Doct. 8. *Amongst those circumstances of sinne, mentioned in the text, there is none whereby it is more aggravated, then stubborn boldnesse, and selfe-willednesse.*

This is gathered from these words: *Presumptuous, selfe-willed, &c.*

Reason 1. Because they are tokens of a will sinning with full consent.

2. They are tokens of a seared conscience.

3. They are most contrary unto repentance.

Use 1. This may serve to condemne those, that account it a great praise unto themselves, that they are bold to commit all kind of villanous acts: they neither feare men, nor God himselfe; as it is said of the unjust Judge in the Gospel.

2. To admonish us, although we cannot wholly abstaine from all sin, yet to take heed that we do not please our selves in any sin, nor to go on and persist stubbornly, and presumptuously in it.

Verse

Verse 11. *Whereas Angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.*

The Analysis.

THat the Apostle may aggravate that sin, which he had laid to charge of the false teachers in the former words, he makes a comparison betwixt them and the Angels, such as is made, verse 9. and the 10. But in this comparison there is contained a two-fold dis-similitude, namely, of their condition, and their actions. Their condition, because the Angels are high and mighty, but these men were of a low mean condition. Their actions, because the Angels abstained from speaking evill of dignities, but these men gave their minds unto it. The former dis-similitude is set forth by a kind of inequality, of greater and lesser, because there is indeed a very great inequality, but this dis-similitude ariseth from the inequality. Both parts of the comparison are disposed in a discreet axiom as it were to this sense. Although the Angels do farre exceed these dignities in power, yet they do not speak evill of them; but these men, although they be far inferiour unto them in power, yet they fear not to speak evill of them.

Touching the former part of the comparison two questions may be made.

Quest. 1. In what sense the Angels are said to be greater in power and might?

Answer. The Angels are said to be greater in power and might, not so much in respect of the false teachers, as in respect of the dignities themselves, whereof the Apostle here speaks. And the reason is, not only because they are of a more excellent nature then men; but also because God hath set them over men, and commanded them to watch over Governments, Common-wealths, and consequently over dignities. Whence they are often called in Scripture *Dominions*, as *Ephesians* 1. 21.

Quest. 2. How this is true, that they do not bring railing accusation

accusation against dignities, when God himselfe sometimes speaks evill of them, and makes the Angels to execute his malediction?

Answer. They are said to abstaine from speaking evill, 1 Because they do not speak evill, but when God commands them, and therefore it is not their malediction so much as Gods. 2 Though they do speak evill of the men that are set in authority, and do evill also unto them sometimes, as we see in the example of *Herod*, and in the Host of *Senacherib*, yet they do not speak evill of the dignities themselves, which was the sin of these impostors, of whom the Apostle speaks.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *Their sin is the greater, who are of a lower condition, if they wax proud and despise dignities, then if they were set in a higher degree.*

This is the ground of the Apostles comparison. For otherwise it would make nothing to the aggravation of the sinne of these men.

Reason 1. Because his sin is the greater, that is drawn unto sin upon the lighter occasion or smaller temptation.

2. Because such men are not moved by those reasons, that might and should with-hold them from committing such a sin, which other men have not after the same manner.

Vse. This may serve for condemnation, to condemne the fashion of some men of the lowest rank, who even in that condition of life are as proud, and more also sometimes, then they that are in the highest degree of dignity and honour.

Doct. 2. *The Angels are greater in power then all men.*

Vse. This may serve for the comfort of the faithfull, because God hath given the Angels a speciall charge over them, so that they are said to pitch their tents about them.

Doct. 3. *These powerfull Angels do most religiously abstaine from all sinne.*

For what is here said in speciall, is to be understood also in generall.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, therefore the more carefully to beware of sin; both because we are bound by the Law at least as well as they, and also because otherwise we cannot have those good and powerful ministring Spirits to take care of us.

Verse 12. *But these as naturall bruit beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evill of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption.*

The Analysis.

THe other part of the comparison is contained in this verse, wherein the sin of the false teachers despising and speaking evill of dignities, is aggravated by a new comparison of the like, so that in this verse there is both a shewing of the dissimilitute, and also a whole similitude explained by its parts. The proposition of this similitude containes a description of naturall bruit beasts: the Apodosis contains a description of false teachers, according to those qualities which they have proportionably with those bruit beasts. The description of the bruit beasts contains three things: 1 Their inward nature, which is expressed by a negation, that they are *void of reason, bruits.* 2 Their acts or operations, which are said to proceed, not from counsell, but *from nature, naturall.* 3 Their end and destruction, that they are *taken and destroyed.* To these there are three also answerable in false teachers: 1 That they are void of judgement, *they understand not.* 2 That they are carryed with a naughty passion to speak evill, *speak evill of the things that they understand not.* 3 That they bring upon themselves destruction; *they shall perish in their own corruption.*

The Doctrines arising hereh ence.

Doct. 1. *Sin, where it reignes, turnes a man into a bruit beast as it were.*

This is shewed in all those places of Scripture, where wicked men are compared unto bruit beasts, either in generall, or in speciall, to Horses, Mules, Dogs, Swine, Foxes, Wolves, Beares, Lions, &c. Yea, they that are in greatest honour and esteeme in this world, are accounted no otherwise of by God, then as bruit beasts. The Monarchs, in *Daniel*, are alwayes compared unto wild beasts; and the Roman Emperours that persecuted the Church, are pointed out in the Apocalyps by the

the name of the Dragon. And the Pope is not only called a beast, but is described as a very great monster among the beasts, with seven heads, and ten hornes.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemn those, that please themselves in their sins.

2. To admonish us, so much the more to beware of sinne, lest at length with *Nebuchadnezzar* we be cast downe from the greatest glory to the lowest condition of all.

Doct. 2. *The fountaine of all this sin and misery is the want of a right and spirituall judgement.*

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, diligently therefore to betake our selves unto prayer, and other means, that are sanctified by God, for the enlightning of our mind, and keeping it sound.

Doct. 3. *A signe of such a condition, that is, of a man turning to a brutt beast, is, to follow the passions of corrupted nature, without reason.*

Vse. This may serve to convict and condemne many, that seeme unto themselves to be excellent men.

Doct. 4. *Such men do corrupt also whatsoever naturall goodnesse they have in them.*

This is gathered from this word, *corruption*, as it is explained, *Iude* v. 10.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, therefore to hate and detest such courses.

Doct. 5. *Such sinners are entangled in their sins, and kept unto destruction, like as bruit beasts in their snares, wherewith they are taken.*

So 2 *Tim.* 2. 26. *Lament.* 1. 14.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to flye from all corruption, as we would from the snares of eternall death.

Verse 13. *And shall receive the reward of unrighteousnesse, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time: spots* they are *and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you:*

Verse 14. *Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin, beguiling unstable soules; an heart they have exercised with covetous practises, cursed children.*

The Analysis.

After that description of these men, which was set down in the three fore-going verses, here in the beginning of this 13 verse, is againe repeated that just punishment which they must expect: *they shall receive the reward of unrighteousnesse.* Then he makes a new description of the same men, that they might wax the more fierce if it were possible. And he describes them by three chiefe vices, 1 By the luxury, whereunto they gave their minds. 2 By their uncleanneſſe, 3 By their covetousneſſe. Their luxury is set forth and aggravated, 1 By the adjunct of pleasure. 2 By the adjunct of time, that it was in the *day time.* 3 By the effect, that they did by this means, as spots and blemishes, defile not only themselves, but also those with whom they were conversant. Of which effect also he shewes the cause in another effect, that *deceiving* was joyned with this luxury. Their uncleanneſſe is described, 1 By the helping causes or instruments, in these words: *Having eyes full of adultery.* 2 By the adjunct of constancy, because *they cannot cease from sin.* 3 By the effect, *beguiling unstable soules.* Their covetousneſſe is explained, 1 By the primary subject of it, in these words, *the heart*, there it was seated. 2 By the adjunct of custome, in these words, *A heart exercised.* Last of all, the end and summe of this description is expressed, that they are *accursed children.*

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *When we think of the sins of wicked men, we should likewise think of their punishments.*

This is gathered therehence, that the Apostle doth ever now and then put in this, while he speaks of these mens sins.

Reas.

Reason. 1. Because these two are in Gods purpose and their own nature knit together.

2. Because the consideration of sin doth oftentimes more hurt then good, if the consideration of the punishment be not joyned unto it.

Vse. This may serve to condemne those, that take delight only in the commemoration either of their own, or other mens sins.

Doct. 2. *Profuse luxury is a signe of a man sinning securely.*

This is gathered out of the text, and it is expressly set down, *Iude* v. 11.

Reason. Because such men do either not think at all of the judgements of God, or do labour at least to remove such thoughts out of their minds.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, not to account such men happy, as the multitude useth to do.

2. To admonish us to beware of such excesse.

Doct. 3. *Luxury, the more it is shewed openly, the more it is to be condemned.*

This is gathered from that Epithete, *in the day time.*

Reason. Because it is so much the farther off from shame, and consequently from repentance.

Vse. This may serve to condemne that impudence, which many men have gotten.

Doct. 4. *There is the greatest danger in those sins, from which the greatest pleasure and delight ariseth.*

Reason. Because pleasure is a signe of a perfect habit.

2. Because pleasure is very hardly left.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to beware of those delights which arise from sin.

Doct. 5. *They that please themselves most in their sins, do most defile and contaminate both themselves and others.*

This is gathered from these words, *spots and blemishes*, as it is also *Iude* v. 12.

Reas. Because the more any sin appears in the Church, the greater dishonour doth it bring, not only to the sinner himselfe, but also to the whole Church, whereof he is a member.

Doct. 6. *The outward members also of wicked men are full of wickednesse.*

This

This is gathered therehence, *Having eyes full*, &c.

Reason 1. Because out of the abundance of the heart all our faculties, and all the instruments of operations receive impressions answerable unto the heart.

2. Because sin, or temptation unto sin is admitted into the heart it selfe by the outward senses, as by channels or gates; so that the eyes and such like corporeall instruments are filled two wayes, both in the ingresse and the egresse of sin: Whence it comes to passe, that as the gates of a great City use to be fuller then the other parts of the City, by reason of the frequent ingresse and egresse of people, so also are the eyes of such like men.

Vse 1. This may serve to instruct us, to see and bewaile the miserable condition, whereunto men are obnoxious by reason of sin; because they have no part clean or void of sin.

2. To admonish us, to use all care to cleanse our selves, and all our faculties and parts both of body and mind from such uncleanesse.

Doct. 7. *The uncleanesse of the body is oftentimes joyned with impurity of religion.*

This is gathered from these words; *adultery.*

Reason 1. Because the hindring cause or that which keeps it off is removed, namely, pure religion.

2. Because this is the just judgement of God, *Rom.* 1. 26.

3. Because by reason of these carnall affections men do withdraw themselves from piety, or impugne it.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, so much the more religiously to imbrace purity in religion.

Doct. 8. *In such men covetousnesse is oftentimes joyned with their impiety.*

This is gathered from these words, *covetous practises.*

Reason. Because that doth chiefly pertaine to the rule and sway which the devill exerciseth over his servants, 1 *Iohn* 2. 16

2. Because by covetousnesse they seek those things that serve to nourish their impurity of life.

Vse. This may serve for a generall admonition, to abstaine even from the least sins, if we would not admit of others also.

Doct. 9. *The exercising of the heart unto such sins, doth very much strengthen and increase them.*

This

This is gathered from that word: *A heart they have exercised.*

Reason 1. Because exercising a mans selfe unto sin brings in and increaseth the habit.

2. It is a token that a man takes pleasure in such sins. For no man doth willingly exercise himselfe in those things wherein he takes no delight.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, according to the counsell of the Apostle, 1 *Tim.* 4. 7. to exercise our selves unto godlinesse, not unto wickednesse. For as the Apostle there saith, verse 8. that *bodily exercise profiteth little*; so in this comparison may it be said, that the exercise of sin is not only unprofitable, but very hurtfull.

Doct. 10. *They that are after this manner accustomed unto their sins, are hardned in them.*

This is gathered from these words; *They cannot cease from sinne.*

Reason. Because by this means sin gets great strength and dominion.

2. Because every way unto repentance is stopped up.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, to leave off our wicked purposes in time.

Doct. 11. *Such men are most to be detested.*

This is gathered from these words: *cursed children.*

Reason. Because they are most opposite and contrary unto that which is most to be loved.

Use. This may serve to exhort us, to shew our zeale in flying from sin and sinners.

Verse 15. *Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousnesse,*

Verse 16. *But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumbe Asse speaking with mans voice, forbad the madnesse of the Prophet.*

The

The Analysis.

THe Apostle here still continues in explaining and illustrating the covetousnesse of these men by way of a similitude, which he makes betweene them and *Balaam* the son of *Bosor*. Now the quality wherein they are compared is first propounded in generall, that they followed his way, that is, they imitated him in the like manner of doing, and then set forth in particular, 1 By the effect, that they forsook the right way, and went astray into by wayes, that is, into naughty and wicked wayes. 2. By the proper cause of this effect, that they loved the wages of unrighteousnesse, like as he loved it, that is, for the desire of filthy lucre they gave themselves over unto impiety and unrighteousnesse. 3 By the adjunct that followes upon this effect, namely, Gods rebuking of him, v. 16. which is set forth by the instrument, that he made use of to do it, namely, a dumbe Asse. The fitnesse also of this instrument as he was made use of at that time, is declared by their inequality, because he shewes that this Asse was in some sort wiser then his Master. For when the Master, though he was a Prophet, was mad, this Asse by his wisdome as it were, rebuked and corrected that madnesse.

Quest. But here a question may be made concerning this *Balaam* the son of *Bosor*, who is here called a Prophet, and yet is said to have sinned most wickedly. Whether he were a true Prophet of God, or no?

Answ. He was sometime endued with the gift of Prophesie that God had communicated unto him, as it appears, *Num.* 22. 5o 23, 24. But in a speciall manner in 23. 26. the Lord is said to have *put words into his mouth*, so also verse 20. & cap. 24. 2. *the Spirit of the Lord* is said *to have come upon him*, and verse 4. he is said to have *heard the words of God*. Yet he was not a holy Prophet of God, but as he was given to other vices, and especially to covetousnesse, so also he was skilfull in the Magick arts, by whose helpe, as it is said *Numb.* 24. 1. he used to seek for inchantments. Such an one therefore he was amongst the Prophets, as *Judas* was amongst the Apostles: of which sort also the old Prophet that dwelt at *Bethel*, seemes to have beene in some respect.

The

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *The wicked of every latter age do in their courses imitate those wicked men, that lived before them.*

This is gathered from these words: *Following the way of Balaam.*

For these men did not propose *Balaam* unto themselves for an example to imitate, but because they went in the same wayes, therefore they are said to have followed him.

Reason 1. Because that in-bred corruption, from which such wicked courses are derived, as from their originall fountaine, is one and the same. For although it doth not work alwayes and in all altogether after the same manner, yet when it meets with natures alike, and the like occasions also happen, then it is no lesse like it selfe, then an egge is like an egge.

2. Because the same teacher of wickednesse, the tempter and old Serpent works effectually in his bond-slaves throughout all ages.

3. Because oftentimes also the courses fore-going do not only by tradition, but by transmission as it were also beget courses like themselves.

Vse 1. This may serve to enforme us, not to be too much troubled at the wickednesse of men, that live with us, because there is nothing new under the Sunne in that kinde.

2. To admonish us, not to expect any singular thing from wicked men, while they remaine such, above that which we read of other wicked men before them in ancient time.

3. To exhort us therefore, to labour to be like the ancient godly men, that are commended in Scripture.

Doct. 2. *This is common to all the wicked, to forsake the right way, and go astray in that which is not good.*

This is gathered from these words, *Which having forsaken the right way are gone astray.*

Reason 1. Because the right way is in observing the will of God, or in doing the good works which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them, *Ephes.* 2. 10. *Psal.* 119. 1, 2, *&c.* But wickednesse is another crooked way, which men have found out themselves, cleane contrary to the will of God.

2. Because that is the right way which certainly leadeth unto life, and eternall happinesse, *Matth.* 7. 14. but wickednesse tendeth unto death, *Prov.* 7. 27. & 8. 36.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, diligently to beware of this going astray, alwayes looking unto the right way.

Doct. 3. *Covetousnesse, where it prevaileth, doth most certainly produce this going astray from the right way.*

This is gathered from these words: *who loved the wages of unrighteousnesse:* so 1 *Tim.* 6. 17. He that trusts in uncertaine riches, doth not trust in the living God; and therefore he doth necessarily follow a new way clean contrary unto that which the true and living God hath shewed us.

Reason. Because a covetous man is obnoxious unto all the temptations of the devill, which have any shew of gaine; so that he accounts gaine godlinesse, 1 *Tim.* 6. 5. 9. and this is it which is meant in the text, *they love the wages of unrighteousnesse*, that is, they seek lucre, though it be joyned with the greatest iniquity.

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, to take heed therefore and flye from covetousnesse, as from the greatest plague and enemy of godlinesse, *Coloss.* 3. 5.

2. To exhort us, to labour for contentment, 1 *Tim.* 6. 6. 8.

Doct. 4. *All such wickednesse is rebuked by God.*

This is gathered from the beginning of v. 16. *But was rebuked, &c.*

Reason 1. Because the Scripture and law it selfe which is transgressed by sin, doth therefore rebuke that sin, *Rom.* 7. 7.

2. The consciences of sinners do usually also check them, *Rom.* 2. 15.

3. The very creatures do it also after their manner, *Deut.* 31. 28. and if they should not in their appointed order sufficiently rebuke sinners, there should some extraordinary miracle be shewed rather then they should not be convicted, as we see here in the example of *Balaam.*

Use 1. This may serve to admonish us, to apply our minds unto these rebukings of God, and not to be careless of them, as desperate men use to be; but to yeeld unto them, and shun all those things that are rebuked by God, either in the Scriptures, or in our consciences, or in the creatures.

2. To

2. To exhort us, to use all diligence to seek and preserve in our selves that testimony of God and our conscience, which may be for our comfort, and not for our rebuke.

Doct. 5. *Those men are extreamly and brutishly mad, that will not be rebuked or stopped in their impiety, unlesse it be by some miraculous work.*

This is gathered from the end of verse 16. *the dumbe Asse speaking with mans voice, forbad the madnesse of the Prophet.*

Reason. Because such men are deprived of common sense touching spirituall things, and are given over unto a reprobate sense.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, to beware of that hardnesse of heart, which cannot beleeve God speaking in his word; and not to give way to that vaine imagination, which *Dives* with his brethren is said to have maintained, *Luke* 16. 30. and *Abraham* refutes. verse 31.

Verse 17. *These are welles without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserved for ever.*

Verse 18. *For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonnesse, those that were cleane escaped from them who live in errour.*

Verse 19. *While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.*

Verse 20. *For, if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are againe entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.*

Verse 21. *For it had beene better for them not to have knowne the way of righteousnesse, then after they have knowne it, to turne from the holy commandement delivered unto them.*

Verse 22. *But it is hapned unto them according to the true Proverbe; The Dog is turned to his own vomit againe, and the Sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.*

The Analysis.

IN these verses is contained a refutation of the false teachers, of whom a description was made before. Now the sum of this refutation consists herein, that all those things were vain, which they promised to their disciples or followers. And this is in generall shewed by those comparisons which are made verse 17. Where these teachers are said to be wels as it were, without water, and clouds without raine, because they make shew of many things worthy to be desired, but they performe nothing at all. Upon occasion of these similitudes, by the way he repeats the punishment which God had prepared for them, by a continuation of the same Allegory, namely, that whereas they are wels as it were, or clouds making shew of some mist, they shall at length certainly find the mist of eternall darkenesse. 2 The same vanity is illustrated by the impulsive cause that moved them to spread abroad their new opinions, which was their swelling vanity, verse 18. in the beginning, and by the effect thereof, which was their crafty seducing of Christians to give themselves over to the lusts of the flesh, at the end of the same verse. 3 The same vanity of their promises is set forth, verse 19. at the beginning, by the great dissimilitude and opposition that is betwixt them and their promises. For they promised liberty unto others, when they themselves were servants of corruption. Thence the vanity of their promises is made manifest and palpable as it were; because they promised that, whereunto they themselves were strangers, and far remote from it. 4. That which is put in the dissimilitude, namely, that they were servants of corruption, because some might make a doubt of it, the Apostle confirmes it at the end of verse 19. by the generall definition or description of a servant, or that bondage which he meant, namely, that he is another mans servant, that is overcome by him. For he that is taken by the enemy in warre, is brought in bondage to him, at least untill he hath payed the just price of his ransome. 5 The misery of this bondage is amplified in respect of those, that have made profession of faith and holinesse, by comparing things unequall, betwixt that condition, whereunto

whereunto they were obnoxious before their calling, and this which they have brought upon themselves by their Apostasie, where the misery of the latter condition is made greater then the former, vers. 20. and the reason of it is given, vers. 21. Because the sin is greater, which is committed after and against the knowledge of the right way, then that which is done through ignorance; which inequality is also illustrated by a comparison of the like things, that is explained in proverbiall sentences, of the Dog and the Sow, verse 22.

Quest. Here ariseth a Question, Whether those that were seduced by the false teachers, were before true believers?

Answ. They had that faith which we use to call temporary faith, but they were never soundly rooted in faith. This is proved out of the 14 verse, where all those that were seduced by these deceivers are called *unstable soules*. For if they had beene by sound faith grafted into Christ, then they should have been stable and corroborated in him also. And whereas they are said verse 18. *to have cleane escaped from the wicked*, this was, 1 In respect of the profession which they had made of their true conversion. 2. In respect of the assent, which we must think that they did give inwardly also unto the word, by which they were called to this conversion. 3. In respect of the change which they had made in their outward carriage. 4. In respect of some small beginning also, whereby they tended towards holinesse it selfe.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *They that go astray themselves from the right way, and cause others to go astray, whatsoever they make shew of, they have nothing else in themselves or in their errours but vanity.*

This is gathered out of verse 17. and the beginning of 18. For they are said in the text to be as it were vanity it selfe, as *Solomon* saith of all things that are under the Sunne, in respect of happinesse they are vanity of vanities. Now they are said to be vain, 1 Because they have only a shew of some truth or good, not the thing it selfe. 2. Because they make a shew of communicating some good unto others. but they do not performe it, nor can they. For that is properly called vaine, which is void of that thing which it should have, or which is unfit for that use and end whereunto it should serve.

Reason 1.

Reason 1. Because they have forsaken God, who is the fountaine of all true and solid good.

2. Because they are led by Sathan, who is the father of lyes and of all vanity.

Vse: This may serve to admonish us, to beware therefore of such men, that we be not in any wise deceived by them. For this were to imbrace vanity in stead of eternall happinesse.

Doct. 2. *Yet such men in their vanity are usually most puffed up.*

This is gathered from verse 18. in the beginning. So 1 *Cor.* 8.1. *Knowledge puffeth up.* Which if it be true of the knowledge of things that are true in themselvs, if they be not known as they ought to be known, as it is explained, verse 2. Then much more must we think so of that knowledge which hath a shew of some singular excellency, when there is no solid good in it at all.

Reason. Because such men seeme to themselves to be wise, not only above the ordinary sort, but also above those that excell in the Church of God, yea sometimes above the Apostles themselves and Prophets, and therefore are wont to boast of some depths which they have; which the holy Ghost therefore cals the depths of Sathan, *Apoc.* 2.24.

Vse. This may serve to informe us, alwayes to suspect those men, that are in a wonderfull manner puffed up with their own private conceits of some part of religion.

Doct. 3. *That such men do oftentimes seduce many, and have divers followers, it comes to passe chiefly thereby, that their doctrine, either for the matter of it, or the manner of their teaching, is very agreeable to the carnall lusts of men.*

This is gathered from these words: *they allure through the lusts of the flesh.*

Reason. Because as the flesh doth easily apply it selfe at all times unto carnall doctrine, by reason of that communion that is betwixt them; so especially and most easily doth it, when the doctrine is covered with a shew of religion or truth.

Vse. This may serve for admonition, that if we would be safe from infection and seducing, we should diligently labour for mortification of the flesh. For neither are they only in danger of seducing that have not yet known the truth, but they

they also that have in some sort clean escaped from those that live in errour, as it is in the text.

Doct. 4. *The chiefe lust of the flesh, whereby men are wont to be seduced, is the love of carnall liberty.*

This is gathered from the beginning of verse 19. So *Psalme* 2. 3.

Reason 1. Because the flesh alwayes seeketh its peace and quietnesse, which it cannot enjoy, but by giving it selfe over unto the lusts thereof; and hence it is that carnall men account the command of God and his Word, a yoke, and strong cords, and bands, &c.

2. Because in liberty there is some kinde of shew of that dignity and excellency, whereof all the sons of *Adam* are most desirous ever since they drank in that poyson of the Serpent, *Ye shall be like Gods.*

3. Because it hath a false shadow of that Christian liberty, whereunto we are called, *Iohn* 8.32.33,34. Hence it is, that the cursed sect of Libertines, which under a shew of liberty overthrowes all religion, findeth many well-wishers thereunto, even amongst those that are Christians in name.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that alwayes follow after liberty of what kind soever it be. For Christians are the servants of righteousnesse, although they be free from sin, *Rom.*6.18.

2. To admonish us, to represse and restraine in our selves this carnall desire of liberty, 1 *Cor.*9.27.

Doct. 5. *They that most labour for this carnall liberty, are the most wretched servants of sin.*

This is gathered from these words; *they are the servants of corruption.* So *Rom.*6.20.

Reason 1. Because they are overcome and led captive by sinne.

2. Because they give up themselves wholly to obey sinne, Rom.6.16.19.

3. Because they remain in this bondage, although it be the worst of all, with a kind of pleasure; so that they are the servants of sin more, then those are the servants of men, that are gally-slaves: for these mens minds alwayes wish for liberty, but the others are very well pleased in their most servile condition.

Vse

Vse 1. This may serve to informe us, how we should stand affected towards such men. For although they seem to themselves to be the only happy men almost, yet they are in truth objects most worthy of pity, and not of envie.

2. To admonish us, more and more to get out of this bondage, by yeelding our selves wholly unto God and his righteousnesse, *Rom.6.18,19,22.*

Doct. 6. *They that are brought into this bondage, after that they have made profession and confession of the truth, their condition is more deplorable, then the condition of other sinners.*

This is gathered from, verse 20, 21.

Reason 1. Because their sin is greater then other mens. For where no law is, there is no sin; where the law or the knowledge of the law is lesse, there the sin is lesse: but where the knowledge of Gods law and his will is greater, there the sin is made greater and heavier.

2. Because they do wonderfully dishonour God, while they professe themselves to have known his discipline, and to have had experience of it in some measure, and do afterwards reject it, and prefer sin before it.

3. Because the devill the Prince of sin doth more severely beset those, that he hath withdrawne unto himselfe from the flight as it were, *Matth.12.45.*

4. Because the anger of God is incensed against such men, *Heb.10.26,27.*

5. Because there is scarce any place left for them to repent, *Heb.6.6.*

Vse. This may serve to admonish all those, that know the way of God, to labour also to continue constantly in the same, in all parts of their life and conversation.

Doct. 7. *The filthinesse of sinne should make men to abhorre a returning to the bondage thereof.*

Reason 1. Because we are called unto purity.

2. Because we have professed an abomination of that impurity which is in sin.

3. Because it is abominable unto God, and makes men abominable in his sight.

Vse 1. This may serve to condemne those, that take delight in this filthinesse, and think they gain credit unto themselves thereby

thereby, by gracing and setting out their speech with oathes, and labour to make their conversation pleasing, by applying themselves unto the customes and vicious and filthy courses of men.

2. To admonish us, to put before our eyes this filthinesse of sin. So shall we renew our repentance, and be confirmed in the grace of perseverance.

Chapter III.

Verse 1. *This second Epistle (beloved) I now write unto you, in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance:*
Verse 2. *That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy Prophets, and of the commandement of us the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour.*

The Analysis.

THe Apostle now making haste to the end of the Epistle, 1 Repeats the scope and aime that he had in writing, in the 1 & 2 verses. 2 He doth again describe those men, of whom he writes this Epistle, that they should beware, verse 3,4. 3 He refutes their blaspemies, from verse 5. to verse 11. 4 He shewes the use and fruit of his doctrine, which all the faithfull should make of it, from verse 11 to the end. In repeating the end and scope of the Epistle he sets it forth and describes it, 1 By the *genus*, that it is *a putting in remembrance*. 2 By the effect, that it *stirres up*. 3 By the object, that it was directed unto them, that had a pure minde. 4 By the means how to obtaine this effect, namely, those things which were spoken before by the Prophets, and commanded by the Apostles, verse 2. 5 By the manner how all these things might be made the more effectuall: to which purpose he useth a kinde of illustration, namely, that this putting in remembrance was iterated and repeated with an earnest vehemency. *This second Epistle I write*, and that with a fatherly kind of love, which is intimated

in the title which he gives them, when he cals them *beloved.* Of the putting in remembrance we spake before, c. 1. v. 12 13. and also of stirring up: Therefore passing over them, we come to the next.

Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *The minds of the faithfull should be indued with purity, and sincerity, that they may receive the divine admonitions as they ought to be received.*

This is gathered from these words: *I stir up your pure minds.* Now he doth not so much commend them by this his testimony, as shew them, what thing they ought chiefly to labour for, that they may receive benefit by this writing. So *Iames* 1.21. and this first Epist. cap. 2. verse 2.

Reason 1. Because, as in all things that are of any moment, there is always required some preparing of the subject, for example, as in husbandry, plowing and harrowing of the ground: so and much more also is it required that we should prepare our hearts to receive the word of God with benefit, *Ierem.* 4.3,4 Now there can be no fitter preparation, then by sincerity to lay aside all those things, that are contrary to the word, and hinder the efficacy thereof.

2. Because the word of God is sincere, and therefore it requires sincerity in those that receive it, 1 *Epist.* c. 2. v. 2.

3. Because without sincerity nothing at all is done aright. For sincerity is the common affection of obedience.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those, that have no care at all, rightly to dispose themselves for to receive the word of God aright.

2. To exhort us, to labour chiefly for this purity of minde, and sincerity of heart.

Doct. 2. *They that have a pure minde, do willingly receive and retain those things that are proposed unto them out of the Prophets and Apostles.*

This is gathered from verse 2.

Reason 1. Because Christs sheepe know his voice and follow him, *Iohn* 10.27. Now his voice sounds in the Prophets and Apostles.

2. Because in the Prophets and Apostles all things agree with sincerity, 1 *Pet.* 2.2. *Psal.* 19.8,9.

Vse

Vse. This may serve to informe us, to examine our minds according to this rule: for they that care not for the words of the Prophets and Apostles, have not purity of minde; but they that cleave fast unto them, although it be accompanied with divers infirmities, have alwayes in readinesse a sure argument of their sincerity.

Doct. 3. *Yet the very best have need to be often stirred up unto these duties.*

This is gathered from these words; *This second Epistle I now write.*

So *Phil.*3.1, and this Epistle, c.1.v.10.13.

Doct. 4. *Such admonitions are works of Christian charity.*

This is gathered from this title, *beloved.*

Reason 1. Because they tend to deliver men from the greatest evill, and to communicate unto them the greatest good.

2. Because they pertaine unto the communication which is exercised by charity.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove those that cannot endure admonitions, and take them for their enemies that use them. *Gal.*4.16. 2 *Tim.*4.3.

2. To exhort us, to exercise our selves unto this duty with all charity.

Verse 3. *Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes, scoffers, walking after their own lusts,*

Verse 4. *And saying, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the Fathers fell asleepe, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.*

The Analysis.

UPon occasion of the Apostles testimony before cited, there is in these words a new description made of some wicked men of whom we must greatly beware. For in that he saith, that this is first to be knowne, what these wicked men are, of whom he doth admonish us, he doth thereby mean not only to shew that this is necessary to be known for the understanding and applying of the Apostles words with benefit,

but also that this may and ought to be chiefly observed out of the Apostles words, namely, that there shall come such men in the last dayes. For so is this phrase explained, *Iude*, v. 18. These wicked men are described in generall, 1 By their impiety towards God, that they are *scoffers*. 2 By their impurity of life and deeds, that *they walke after their own lusts*. Then in special by their arguing, that the wicked scoffers used, to defend their impiety, and to remove the contrary doctrine from themselves, verse 4 For in those words is expressed, 1 their scoffing, which was before noted in generall, and 2 their argument is set forth, whereby they would perswade themselves and others, that they might walk after their own lusts, without feare or danger: namely, because the comming of God, the expectation whereof did deterre men from such a life, is not to be feared, in these words: *Where is the promise of his comming*? Now this they confirmed to themselves and others by a vaine comparing the times that went before with those that were to come; that whereas there was no comming of the Lord to judge the world since the times of the Fathers, and from the creation of the world, there was no cause to feare that any such thing would happen at the end of the world, in these words, *For since the Fathers fell asleepe, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation*. Now this whole description, or rather the thing described, that is, this impiety, is illustrated by the adjunct of time, wherein chiefly and by a speciall kind of eminency or abundance it is found, namely, *in the last dayes*.

The Doctrines arising here-hence.

Doct. 1. *In the reading of the Scriptures we must give speciall heed unto those things whereof we have greatest use.*

This is gathered from these words: *Knowing this first*. For the Apostle would, that for the present they should first and chiefly think of those things, that the Apostles had spoken for their present use, touching those wicked men.

Doct. 2. *The Scripture foretels most grievous things of the last dayes.*

So 1 *Tim* 4. 1. 2 *Tim*. 3. 1.

Reason 1. For that iniquity doth abound more in the last dayes, it is because knowledge doth abound, which is held

under

under righteousnesse: that makes the sin the more sinfull, *Rom.* 7. 13 and doth more incense the wrath of God, *Romans* 1, 18.

2. Because the last ages, by reason of that depravednesse and corruption which hath over-spread mankind, are as it were the sink of all the ages that went before, to receive their dregs.

Use 1. This may serve to informe us, not to be too much troubled in mind, when we see as it were an inundation of iniquity and impiety, flowing every where; because such things were foretold us before, *John* 16. 4.

2. Not to fashion our selves to those courses, that are common in this age, but to prepare and arme our selves rather against their contagion.

Doct. 3. *Amongst wicked men they are the worst of all, that scoffe at godlinesse.*

This is gathered from this word, *scoffers.*

Reason 1. Because they are not only unbelievers, but despisers of the faith also. For scoffing is from contempt.

2. Because their consciences are seared as it were with a hot iron, that can be wrought upon by no instruction, and therefore they are quite desperate. For they have quenched and choaked even those naturall sparks, which are wont to break out in all mens hearts.

3. Because they are the chosen instruments of the devill to turne aside others from godlinesse, and to make the faithfull servants of God ashamed of it, if it were possible. For the proper effect of scoffing is shame.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, to shun such scoffers as the monsters and pests of mankind.

Doct. 4. *They that maintaine wicked opinions in their minde, are given to impurity in their life.*

This is gathered therehence, that the same men are called *scoffers, and such as walk after their own lusts.*

Reason 1. Because the proper cause, why such men do labour so much to cast off all sense of religion, is no other, then that they may with all licentiousnesse, give themselves wholy over to their most filthy lusts.

2. Because such wicked opinions or imaginations do let

loose

looſe the raines to all concupiſcence, and therefore are the cauſe of increaſing that wickedneſſe, whereof at the firſt they were the effect.

Vſe 1. This may ſerve to informe us, not to think that wicked and profane and Atheiſticall men do ſpeak from any reaſon or judgement, when they ſcoffe at religion. For they are beaſts in their life, and therefore they have alſo beaſtly imaginations, which they are wont to bring forth under a ſhew of reaſon.

2. To admoniſh us, in ſhunning profane and blaſphemous opinions and imaginations, to beware eſpecially of a wicked life, becauſe it makes way for all wicked opinions.

Doct. V. *That is proper to wicked and prophane men, in ſome ſort to deny the comming of the Lord, and his judgement.*

This is gathered from verſe 4 at the beginning.

Reaſon. Becauſe the expectation of judgement is a ſtrong bridle to reſtraine and keep in the wickedneſſe of men, which ungodly and profane men do moſt of all deſire to ſhake off.

Vſe. This may ſerve to admoniſh us, by all means to take heed, that we be not any way partakers of that impiety: which comes to paſſe not only then when we do utterly deny his comming, but alſo when we do either make any doubt of it, or apprehend it as a thing far off from us, or do ineffectually think of it, not edifying our ſelves in faith and obedience.

Doct. 6. *The fallacy wherewith wicked and profane men do deceive themſelves, conſiſts therein, that they will believe nothing above their ſenſes, and do oppoſe their ſenſe againſt the teſtimony of God.*

This is gathered ver. 4. at the end. *For ſince the Fathers, &c.*

Reaſon. Becauſe they are ſenſuall men, *Iude*, v. 19. and are led by ſenſe and ſenſible things, like as bruit beaſts.

Vſe 1. This may ſerve for information: hence we may underſtand that the contradictions of profane men are void of all reaſon, and therefore are to be contemned with deteſtation. Nothing can be more contrary or mad, then to conſult with nature about ſupernaturall things, and to fetch the judgement of ſpirituall things from ſenſe.

2. To admoniſh us, not to attribute any thing to our ſenſes in matters of faith. For it is all one, as if we ſhould ſeek the judgement of reaſon amongſt bruit beaſts. Verſe

Verse 5. *For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water,*

Verse 6. *Whereby the world, that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.*

Verse 7. *But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.*

The Analysis.

IN the refutation of this profane opinion, the Apostle doth first reprove the ignorance of these profane men, verse 5.6.7. Secondly, he doth instruct the faithfull touching the comming of the Lord in those things, that did most pertaine to the confirmation of them in the truth against such temptations that might arise from such humane cavillings, verse 8. 9, 10. The Apostle reproves their ignorance, 1 From the cause, that it was voluntary or affected ignorance. 2 From the object, namely that truth, which they willingly were ignorant of, and did oppugne. Now that truth which is affirmed contradicts that assertion, whereby these men would confirme their opinion. For when they had said it, and had brought it for an argument, that all things did continue in the same estate from the beginning of the creation, the Apostle denies this, and shewes the contrary by the history of the flood, v. 6. then by comparing things alike, he gathers that the same also is to be expected concerning the destruction of the world by fire at the comming of the Lord, that was before in some sort performed by the destruction of it in water, v. 7. 3 The reason of this consequence is taken from the common cause of creation, preservation, and both destructions of the world, namely, the word & will of God, v. 5. 7. 4 He doth illustrate the conclusion it selfe concerning the destruction of the world by the end thereof, that it may withall be applyed unto those wicked ones, with whom he now dealt, v. 7 at the end, while he cals the day of the Lord *the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.* For in these words he threatens eternall damnation unto those profane men, that denied his comming, wch must certainly be expected at the comming of the Lord. The

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *It is the property of wicked men to be willingly ignorant of all things, that crosse their lusts.*

This is gathered from these words: *They willingly are ignorant of.* All men are ignorant of many things, but the faithfull are not ignorant of those things that are necessary for them unto salvation, nor do they please themselves in the ignorance of any truth, much lesse in the ignorance of those things that pertaine unto the practise of religion: nay they do very much labour for this knowledge, whereby they may be brought unto eternall life: but the wicked, although they do very much desire to know other things, yea and are too curious in it, yet they love to be ignorant of those things that pertaine to the bridling of their lusts and reproving of their sins. This is that ignorance which is called voluntary and affected.

Reason 1. Because they affect those vices whereunto this knowledge is repugnant. Therefore they eschew knowledge as a thing that is evill unto them, and makes against them; and affect ignorance as a thing that is good for them and very well agreeing with them. For he that hath resolved with himselfe to give his mind unto sin, and to continue therein, seekes to have peace and quietnesse in that condition, and therefore abhorres that truth which convinceth his conscience of sin, and suffers him not to sleep in it.

2. Because he is given unto those lusts that stop up the way unto saving knowledge, and hold him ensnared and intangled so that he cannot freely endeavour and labour for true knowledge: therefore he affects ignorance in this respect, not so much in it selfe, as in the cause of it.

Vse 1. This may serve to convince those, that please themselves in the ignorance of holy things, because this is the property of a wicked man.

2. To admonish us, never to shut our eyes against the light of the truth.

3. To exhort us, on the contrary to use all our endeavour and give all diligence to gaine knowledge, especially in those things that pertaine to our own practise and life.

Doct.

Doct. 2. *It makes verie much for the taking away or lessening of our ignorance, to look upon the works of God that are past, that from them we may gather the works that are to come.*

This is gathered from the comparison that is here made, v. 5.6,7.

Reason. Because the works of God are as looking-glasses, wherein Gods sufficiency and efficiency are proposed unto us to behold.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to look slightly upon the works of God, nor to read the histories of them as we read humane histories, but so, that we may alwayes behold God in them.

Doct. 3. *Those publick works of God, the creation, preservation, and destruction of the world, first by water, secondly by fire, are often to be meditated upon, and compared one with the other.*

This is gathered from the same comparison.

Reason. Because God hath proposed those, as very remarkable arguments, to worke some sense at least of religion in mens minds.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to exercise our selves in these meditations, which God hath commended unto all sorts of men.

Doct. 4. *In all such works of God, that is especially to be considered, that they are by the word of God, and do depend thereupon.*

This is gathered from verse 5,7.

Reason. Because we can receive no benefit by meditating upon Gods works, unlesse we do behold the perfection of God in them. Now the perfection of God in his works doth very much appeare therein, that all things are done by his word and according to his will.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, to turne our eyes from all second causes, and to acknowledge God and his word in all things. For thence it comes to passe, that men often times attribute those things unto fortune, which are done by God, because they are ignorant of the power of Gods word. And such an opposition there seems to be in the text, betwixt the words of the wicked, (when they say that all things continue, making no mention in the mean time of God, by whose

power they continue; but rather closely attributing this continuance to fortune or second causes, and that assertion of the Apostle, whereby he affirmes that the world was at first by Gods word, and is kept by the same word:

Doct. 5. *Every consideration of the works of God should be applyed to the comfort of the faithfull, and terrour of the wicked.*

This is gathered from v. 7. at the end.

Verse 8. *But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeares, and a thousand yeares as one day.*

Verse 9. *The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, (as some men count slackenesse) but is long-suffering to us ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.*

Verse 10. *But the day of the Lord will come as a theefe in the night, in the which the heavens shall passe away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also, and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.*

The Analysis.

IN this other part of the refutation the Apostle propoundeth unto the godly and faithfull those things that might establish and confirme their hearts in the truth, touching the comming of the Lord. 1 Therefore he perswades them to understanding and knowledge, contrary to the ignorance of the wicked. For whereas he had spoken before of the wicked, *this they are willingly ignorant of*, now turning to the faithfull he exhorts them unto the contrary. *But be not you ignorant of this one thing.* 2. He propounds the thing it selfe, which he would have them in a speciall manner to understand and observe, which containes two things. 1 That the prolonging of the Lords comming is not with that slackneſſe, which should be a stumbling-block to any man, both because it is not to be judged of according to our sense, but by the eternity of God, in respect whereof that space of time, which seemes very long unto us, is but as one day, v. 8. and also because the

end

end of this prolonging is the conversion and salvation of sinners: and therefore this prolonging proceeds not so much from slackness, as from patience, verse 9. 2 That the manner of his comming, (both because it shall be sudden, and also because it shall be with majesty and great terrour,) is such, that it should rather make men carefull to prepare themselves for it, then to be curious in inquiring about the time it selfe, or to complaine of slackness.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *When wicked and profane men are reproved, refuted and condemned in Scripture, this is done for the faithfull and elects sake, whose edification and salvation God hath respect unto, even when he seemes to speak unto others.*

This is gathered from the beginning of verse 8. where the Apostle turning himselfe directly unto the faithfull, shewes that these wicked men were refuted for their good. So 2 *Thess.* 2.13. *Jude*, v.20. 1 *Tim.*6.11. 2 *Tim.*3.14.

Reason 1. Because the whole Scripture and all the meanes of salvation do by a speciall kind of propriety belong unto the faithfull.

2. Because God will not have his word to passe without some fruit: Now wicked men are oftentimes so fore-lorne, that no congruous fruit can be expected in them, but only in the faithfull.

Use 1. This may serve to informe us, to judge aright of Gods intention in those things that he doth about men that are past all hope and incorrigible. For as the Apostle saith of Oxen, that God taketh not care for Oxen, but for men; so should we think that God taketh not care so much for these bestiall men, as for the faithfull and elect whom he doth chiefly speak unto even when he seemes to speak unto others.

2. To admonish us, not to neglect or despise such rebukings of the wicked, as if they did nothing belong unto us, but wisely to turne it to our own use.

Doct. 2. *The faithfull do then profit by the word of God, which is against the wicked, when they are become much unlike the wicked.*

This is gathered therehence, that whereas the Apostle did reprove the wicked of ignorance, he doth now exhort the faithfull to knowledge, *Prov.*1.15.

Reason. Because the courses and fashions of the wicked are therefore set forth unto us, that we might avoid them.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, not to suffer our selves to be led away by the example of the wicked multitude. For God doth not propose it as a thing to be followed, but to be shunned and avoided.

Doct. 3. *We should in a singular manner differ from the wicked therein, that we judge of the wayes of God not according to the sense of the flesh, but according to the nature of God.*

This is gathered from these words: *One day with the Lord.* With men it is otherwise.

Reason. Because spirituall things are to be judged of spiritually. Now all the wayes of God are in some sort spirituall and divine.

Vse. This may serve to reprove those, that in such examinations are wont to consult with flesh and blood, and not with the word of God.

Doct. 4. *The end of all Gods wayes, as they have respect unto men, is the repentance and salvation of the godly.*

This is gathered from v. 9. Now here ariseth a question.

Quest. Whether all and every particular man be meant thereby, when it is said, that God is not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance?

Answ. The patience of God according to its nature hath that use and end, to lead all sinners unto repentance, *Rom.* 2. 4. and in that sense might their interpretation be admitted, who understand these words and the like of all and every particular man: But that the Apostle in this place hath speciall reference to the elect, it appears thereby, that he speaking of the beloved of God, verse 8. and reckoning himselfe amongst the number of us, saith, that God is long-suffering to us-ward, that is, towards those beloved, and is not willing that any should perish, that is, any of them: because Gods principall work towards men is the salvation of the faithfull, and therefore all his wayes tend thereunto, as unto the scope and mark whereunto they are directed.

Vse 1. This may serve to reprove the madnesse of those men that blame those things in God, which make most for their use and good, as these men do in the slackness of the Lords comming.

2. To

2. To admonish us, not to pervert these right wayes of God, but alwayes to apply them unto that use whereunto they tend, that is, to the furtherance of our own repentance and salvation.

Doct. 5. *The way of the Lord, when he commeth to judgement, shall be with swiftnesse, majesty and terrour.*

This is gathered from verse 10.

First, it shall be sudden, because the houre and day thereof is not revealed, and because the most part of men expect no such thing. And it shall be full of majestie and terror, because it is the comming of the Lord not in humility, as his first comming was, but in glory.

Use. This may serve to admonish us, to prepare our selvs accordingly against this comming of the Lord. For this use the Apostle presseth and exhorteth us unto in the rest of the chap.

Verse 11. *Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godlinesse,*

Verse 12. *Looking for, and hasting unto the comming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?*

Verse 13. *Nevertheless, we according to his promise, looke for new heavens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.*

Verse 14. *Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent, that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.*

Verse 15. *And account, that the long suffering of the Lord is salvation, even as our beloved brother* Paul *also, according to the wisdome given unto him, hath written unto you.*

Verse 16. *As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned, and unstable, wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, unto their own destruction.*

Verse 17. *Ye therefore beloved, seeing ye know* these things *before, beware lest ye also being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastnesse.*

Verse 18. *But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: to him be glory, both now and for ever, Amen.*

The

The Analysis.

IN these verses is contained an application of the doctrine, that was before propounded concerning the Lords comming, to the use and edification of the faithfull. Now this application is made by an exhortation to piety and holinesse, which is first of all propounded, v. 11. Secondly, confirmed by the doctrine that was before proposed concerning the manner of the Lords comming, v. 12, 13. Thirdly, it is againe repeated and pressed, v. 14. Fourthly it is againe confirmed by the doctrine that was before proposed concerning the patience and long-suffering of God, v. 15. begin. which is in this place confirmed by the testimony of the Apostle *Paul*: whose testimony is illustrated, 1 Thereby, that he was frequent in such testimonies, v. 16. begin. 2 By a preoccupation, whereby the faithfull are admonished not rashly to wrest any thing that *Paul* spake concerning such things, to a contrary sense, because although he spake some things that are hard to be understood, yet they are such that they are not wont to be wrested, but by some perverse men, who wrest the other Scriptures also unto their own destruction. From all these he inferres in the last place a conclusion both of the fore-going exhortation, and also of the whole Epistle, which is, to have a care to be stedfast, v. 17. and to labour for growth, v. 18. The end whereof is shewed to be the glory of Christ in that doxology, wherewith the whole Epistle is closed up.

The Doctrines arising herehence.

Doct. 1. *All Scripture must be applyed unto a practicall use, that it may advance holinesse and piety.*

This is gathered from v. 11. Now not only in this place is this order of instruction observed, but in all the Epistles and Sermons that are propounded in Scripture.

Reason 1. Because the end of all Theologicall doctrine is to live well.

2. Because a bare apprehension and speculation of the truth, and a meere assent thereunto, is nothing worth, if it be separated from the practise. For this is found in some sort in the devils themselves.

3. Becaus

3. Because the temptations of the Devill tend chiefly thereunto, that if he cannot hide the truth, yet so to choak it, that it can bring forth no fruit in the life; and thereupon he takes occasion to mock and deride men.

Use. This may serve to admonish us all, to labour for this both in private and in publike, in preaching, hearing, reading, and meditating upon Gods word; and never think that we know any thing as we ought to know, unlesse we know it unto piety and holinesse.

Doct. 2. *In piety and holinesse we must always aime at and labour for the highest perfection.*

This is gathered 1. From the question, *What manner of persons ought ye to be?* 2. From the plurall number, which is used in the originall, ἐν ἁγιωσύναις, in your conversations, that is, in all piety and holinesse.

Reason 1. Because every degree of piety and holinesse is as desirable in it selfe as the first is.

2. Our desire and affection towards the highest degree of holinesse and piety is a part of the very first degree. For there is no true holinesse without a desire of perfect holinesse.

3. Because we are called unto perfect holinesse, neither can we see God without it.

Use. This may serve to reprove those, that rest in a kind of luke-warme profession, or in a partiall practise of piety and holinesse.

Doct. 3. *It makes much for the advancing of piety, to look for and hasten unto the comming of the day of the Lord.*

This is gathered from v. 12, 14. So *Phil.* 3. 20.

Reason 1. Because it takes off our minds from all those things, that belong unto this present world.

2. Because it makes us to prepare our selves for the world to come, 1 *John* 3. 3.

Use. This may serve to exhort us, to raise up our minds, as much as may be unto this spirituall looking for the Lord.

Doct. 4. *Our chiefest care touching the comming of the Lord, should be, to be found of him in peace.*

This is gathered from v. 14. Now by peace is meant that condition which is pleasing unto God and approved of him; whereupon not the anger, but the goodnesse and grace

of

of the Lord is shewed in communicating all happinesse.

Reason 1. Because the Lord is looked for, as the supreme Judge, whose anger is to be flyed from and avoided, and his approbation and good liking greatly to be sought for.

2. Because unlesse peace be then had, afterwards it cannot be had for ever.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, while we live here, continually to seek to confirme our peace with God, and in our own consciences. Now this is done by raising up in our selves a lively faith and confidence, establishing our hearts with all assurance of salvation, and following all those means whereby our calling and election is made sure.

Doct. 5. *From the long-suffering of God we must gather those things which make for the promoting of our peace and salvation.*

This is gathered from v. 15. For when the Apostle tels us, that we should account, that the long suffering of the Lord is salvation, he means that we should so think wich our selves and dispute of these things, that we should gather nothing else from thence, but that God aimes at our salvation, and therefore we also should take great care of it.

Reason. Because by these meditations we should confirme and increase both our faith and our sanctification. For our reasonings and disputes, when they are rightly directed either by the word, or by the works of God, as by a third argument, to the strengthning of our faith and increase of holinesse, as unto a conclusion drawne from thence; they are those morall means whereby we work out our salvation with feare and trembling.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to exercise our selves more and more in such meditations: for being accustomed thereunto, from them we shall gather honey and medicine, whence others suck poyson; as we may see in this example, wherefrom the Lords prolonging of his comming the wicked men did conclude those things whereby they might confirme their profane opinions; but the faithfull are taught on the contrary, by the same argument to conclude those things, which make much for their salvation. Such is the Apostles admonition, *Rom.* 6. 12.

Doct.

Doct. 6. *In the writings of the Apostles and Prophets, Christians must have a speciall heed to those things, which do most direct them to such connexions or conclusions.*

This is gathered from verse 15. Where *Pauls* testimony is cited to confirme & illustrate this connexion, & not to prove other things, which might easily be proved out of his writings.

Reason 1. Because these are most necessary for us to know, and of perpetuall use.

2. Because that was the wisdome of God communicated to the Apostles and Prophets, that they might explaine these truths unto us most frequently, and clearly, which is the reason of that elogy which is given unto *Paul* in the text, *according to the wisdome given unto him he hath written unto us.*

Vse. This may serve to reprove those, that doe more willingly by far give heed unto those things, which do little or nothing at all touch the conscience of a man, or the practise of his life. The inward inclination and disposition of a man appeares manifestly by those things which he doth chiefly heed in his reading and hearing: As if a man be given only to the tongues, he will observe nothing but the words and phrases: If he be a lover of Chronology, he will take notice of nothing but the things that have beene done, and the moments of time wherein they were done: If he be a Disputer, one that seeketh praise by arguing, he will marke nothing, but those things which make for controversies: so a godly man, although he will not neglect other things, which serve for his use, yet he doth chiefly fix his mind upon those things, which do most directly tend unto godlinesse.

Doct. 7. *We must understand all these things so, as if they were directly written unto us.*

This is gathered from these words, *Hath written unto us.* So *Hebr.* 12.5.

Reason 1. Because such was the wisdome of God, which spake in these holy men, that they wrote those things which do belong unto us as well as unto those that lived at that time.

2. Because God would have the Scripture to be the publick instrument of the Church, not of one age only, but of all ages. Therefore every part of it is the rule of life both to me and thee, as well as unto those to whom it was first given.

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, not so much to meddle in the Scriptures, as if we were in another mans ground, or in those things which belong unto others, and not unto our selves.

2. To exhort us, to raise up our minds to receive the word of God with a congruous affection. We may easily think with our selves how our minds would be affected, if we should receive a letter that was written by the hand of God in heaven, and directed unto us by name, and sent unto us by one of his Angels: after the same manner should we be affected in reading and hearing the written word of God.

Doct. 8. *In other truths that are lesse necessary for us to know, there are some things hard to be understood.*

This is gathered from v. 16. He doth not say this of all *Pauls* Epistles, nor of any one whole Epistle, much lesse of the whole Scripture, (as the Patrons of traditions, and Enemies of Scripture would have it,) but of some few things. And he seemes to point chiefly at some of those things, which *Paul* wrote concerning the comming of the Lord, because he speaks of that in this place, & therefore it is very likely that he hath reference unto those things which are spoken of, 2 *Thess.* 2. 2.

Reason 1. Because there are some divine mysteries so farre remote from us, that in what words soever they be expressed, they will alwayes be hard to be understood.

2. Because God would have some things, that are not of so generall and necessary a use, out of his singular wisdome to be more obscurely propounded: which seemes to be the proper reason, why those things of Antichrist, 2 *Thess.* 2. were in the Primitive Church hard to be understood. For God would for just causes, that Antichrist should come, and that most men should be ignorant who he was, untill he did come.

3. God would exercise the industry and diligence of the faithfull in searching the Scriptures, and finding out the sense and meaning of them, not to deter men from reading them, as the Papists use to do, by wresting this argument amisse. For *Peter* in this place doth not discourage so much as the comon sort of the faithfull from reading the Scriptures, but rather stirs them up to read all the Epistles of *Paul*, although he tels them that there are some things in them that must be read warily.

Vse

Vse 1. This may serve to admonish us, not to think it sufficient that we know the words of the Scripture, but to give all diligence and labour to find out the true sense and meaning of them.

2. To comfort us, that we should not be too much cast down, if we do not fully understand some things in the Scripture, because we are told that there are some things hard to be understood.

Doct. 9. *They are unlearned and unstable men, that wrest the Scripture to maintaine their impiety.*

For that the Apostle means, when he saith that they wrest the Scriptures to their own destruction; not that it is such an exceeding dangerous thing to interpret some place of Scripture otherwise then it should be, but that it is the property of a very wicked man to argue out of the word of God against God, or against his will. Now they are called unlearned, not because they have no skill in the tongues or arts, wherein such pestiferous men may sometimes excell; but because they never effectually learned or were taught those things which pertaine unto religion: And in the like manner are they called unstable, because in that knowledge of the truth which they had and professed, they were not grounded and rooted, but as men not grounded nor setled they are easily turned from their profession.

Vse. This may serve for admonition, that the people should not therefore be deterred from reading the Scriptures, as the Papists would have it, (who in this very thing shew themselves to be unlearned and unstable, because they do mischievously wrest this place, where they are expresly told, with how great danger it is wont to be done:) but that we should labour to cast off all ignorance and unsteadfastnesse, that so we may be made fit to read the Scriptures with profit. For this is the scope of the admonition, as the Apostle useth it in this place.

Doct. 10. *The end and scope of all divine information and instruction in respect of the faithfull is, that they may be stablished and grow in that grace which they have received.*

This is gathered therehence, that this is the conclusion of this generall Epistle, as it was of the former; which holds good also in all other Epistles and Sermons, in respect of those that are now faithfull:

Reas. Because by their effectual calling they have faith, hope, and charity begotten in them, so that they have the principle of all grace in them, nor can any thing be wanting besides the continuation, confirmation, and increase of the same grace.

Doct. 11. *To obtaine stedfastnesse in grace there is required a fore-knowledge of those things that tend to the confirming and strengthening of our minds.*

This is gathered from these words: *Seeing ye know these things before.*

Reas. Because although our stedfastnes depends upon God, and the effectuall operation of his Spirit, as it is in the conclusion of the 1 *Pet.* 5.10. Yet God worketh in us not only by a reall efficacy, but also agreeable to an intelligent nature, by teaching and perswading. Now nothing can be wrought by this morall way, unlesse knowledge go before, and so it must be wrought by knowledge, as it is in the text.

Vse 1. This may serve to refute the Papists, who maintaine ignorance and commend it in the common people: they are sufficiently refuted by him, from whom they boast that they have received the Chaire, free from all error. For *Peter* in this place, 1 Requires knowledge of all the faithfull, yea, and fore-knowledge too of those things whereby they might be confirmed against profane men and false teachers. 2 He presupposeth that all that were truly faithfull to whom this Epistle came, were already endued with this knowledge. 3 He presupposeth that his Epistles were so cleare and so easie to be understood, that all the faithfull which should read them with godly minds, might understand out of them, and consequently out of the Scriptures, those things, whereby they being forewarned, might be fore-armed against those false deceivers whereof he spake.

2. To admonish us, not so to look for our confirmation, and strengthening from God, as that we should in the meane time neglect the knowledge of those things that tend thereunto, but to use all our endeavour both in generall to know those things that are absolutely necessary unto salvation, and in particular, those things that are necessary for us in our practise upon occasion of any temptation.

Doct. 12. *Besides knowledge there is required also unto the stedfastnesse of grace a continuall and vigilant heed.* This

This is gathered from this word, *Beware.*

Reason 1. Because knowledge is unprofitable, if it be not reduced to practise. Now practise in difficult things cannot be had without care and heed.

2. Because many are the fallacies wherewith we are assaulted, both in the Devill and his instruments that are without us, and in our selves also, by reason of that marvellous deceitfulnesse of our hearts, such as cannot be expressed.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, above all to take notice of our selves, and those things that tend to the strengthning and stablishing of us in grace.

Doct. 13. *It should be an argument to the faithfull to beware of the errors of some men, because they are wicked men, ungodly, and profane.*

This is gathered from that title, *the error of the wicked.*

Reason. Because all those things that have any agreement with ungodlinesse are to be shunned and avoided. Now those things that are in a speciall manner approved of by profane men, must necessarily have an agreement with profane ungodlinesse.

Vse. This may serve to admonish us, by this means amongst others to strengthen our selves against divers errors, that are most pleasing to profane men.

Doct. 14. *Sedfastnesse and increase of grace are joyned together.*

This is gathered from the connexion of v. 17. with the 18.

Reason 1. Because like as trees and all plants, and also living creatures, from which this metaphor is taken, are corroborated by growth, while they acquire greater and perfecter strength, so also do the faithfull.

2. Because the stedfastnesse of grace consists not therein, that it continues in the same degree, but that it is formed in its nature, one property whereof of is, to grow untill it come to perfection.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to labour therefore to be so stablished, that we may also grow and increase in all grace.

Doct. 15. *They grow in grace, that grow in the effectuall knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ.*

See Chapter 1. Verse 2.

Doct.

Doct. 16. *Our end and desire in all things, even in those things that pertaine to our own salvation, should be the eternall glory of God in Christ.*

This is gathered from the last words.

Reason 1. Because we are the servants of Christ bought with his own blood. Now whatsoever the servants get or do, turnes to the proper good and benefit of their Masters.

2. Because God is absolutely the chiefest good.

3. Unlesse we do this, whatsoever we do, it is not done out of religion. For it is the nature of religion to give the glory unto God.

Vse. This may serve to exhort us, to lift up our minds more and more to maintaine the glory of God in all things, as the Apostle doth by that closing particle, *Amen.*

FINIS.